This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

2 Vols
8/6

4

I. THE Works of the honourable *Robert Boyle*. In five Volumes. To which is prefixed the Life of the Author.

II. The Works of *Francis Bacon*, Baron of *Verulam*, Viſcount *St. Alban*, Lord High Chancellor of *England*. With ſeveral additional Pieces, never before printed in any Edition of his Works. To which is prefixed a new Life of the Author, by Mr. *Mallet*. In 4 Vols.

N. B. The additional Pieces, and Life, may be had alone, to compleat the former Edition.

III. A complete Collection of the Hiſtorical, Political, and Miſcellaneous Works of *John Milton*: Correctly printed from the original Editions. Containing ſeveral original Papers of his, never before publiſhed. By *T. Birch*, M. A. and F. R. S. With an Hiſtorical and Critical Account of the Life and Writings of the Author:

To which is added a large Alphabetical Index, and a curious Head of the Author, engraven by Mr. *Vertue*, from a Drawing by Mr. *Richardſon*. In 2 Vols.

IV. The *Oceana* and other Works of *James Harrington*, Eſq; collected, methodiſed, and reviewed, with an exact Account of his Life prefixed, by *John Toland*. To which is added an Appendix, containing all the Political Tracts wrote by this Author, omitted in Mr. *Toland*'s Edition.

N. B. The Appendix may be had alone, to complete thoſe Gentlemen's Books, who have bought Mr. *Toland*'s Edition.

V. An Hiſtorical and Political Diſcourſe of the Laws and Government of *England*, from the firſt Times to the End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*. With a Vindication of the ancient Way of Parliaments in *England*. Collected from ſome Manuſcript Notes of *John Selden*, Eſq; by *Nathaniel Bacon*, of *Gray's-Inn*, Eſq; the Fourth Edition: Corrected and improved by a Gentleman of the *Middle-Temple*.

N. B. There are a few of the above five Books printed on a ſuperfine Writing Paper.

VI. *Jac. Auguſti Thuani Hiſtoria ſui Temporis*, Edita per *S. Buckley*. In 7 Vols.

This is acknowledged by all the Learned to be the moſt beautiful, correct, and complete Edition, of that incomparable Hiſtorian; and hitherto ſold for Nine Guineas in Sheets, is now to be had at the moderate Price of Seven Guineas a Sett bound.

** There are a few remaining, printed on a Superfine Royal Paper.

MATHO:

OR, THE

Cosmotheoria Puerilis,

A

DIALOGUE.

IN WHICH

The first Principles of PHILOSOPHY and ASTRONOMY are accommodated to the Capacity of young Persons, or such as have yet no Tincture of these SCIENCES. Hence the Principles of Natural Religion are deduced.

Translated, and enlarged by the AUTHOR.

Baxter, Andrew. 1686?-1750.

In TWO VOLUMES.

To which is added, a complete INDEX.

Nam corpus hoc animi pondus & pœna est: Premente illo urgetur, in vinculis est, nisi accessit Philosophia, et illum respirare rerum naturæ spectaculo jussit——Vetas me cœlo interesse, id est, jubes me vivere capite demisso. Seneca.

The SECOND EDITION,

LONDON:

Printed for A. MILLAR, over-against *Katharine-Street* in the *Strand.*

MDCCXLV.

TO

Maſter *GLOVER*,

Son to PHILIPS GLOVER

OF

Wiſpinton, Eſq; in *Lincolnſhire*.

SIR,

I Here preſent you with a * *Tranſlation*, the *Original* of which was wrote for a young Gentleman much about your Age. The Progreſs You

* What the Author here calls a *Tranſlation* contains ſix or ſeven Times more Matter than the *Original*, which was only a Pamphlet of eight or nine Sheets.

and he ſhall make in theſe Things, will beſt ſhew me how I have executed the Deſign. It is reaſonably ſuppoſed by good Judges, that Youth is better qualified to learn, than we are aware of; or really than Men are to teach. True Knowledge has, indeed, been wrapt up in ſuch a myſterious Dreſs, as if it were deſigned to diſcourage young Perſons from attempting it. How I came to make a Trial what a contrary Method might do, would require more Words to ſhew, and apologize for, than is proper to give you the Trouble of Hearing.

If

If I have rightly proſecuted the Plan I propoſed, what is firſt brought in View will ſuit your Humour at preſent, and what follows will ſerve to amuſe you when farther advanced. But if upon Experience, the whole ſhould be found of little Uſe, as it may be thrown aſide, it can do no Harm.

You ought to know, Sir, that it depends in a great Meaſure on thoſe of your Age and Fortune, ſo to lay out your early Years, as to make the riſing Generation virtuous, by the Authority of your Examples afterward. Your Amuſements therefore are of more

Conſequence to the World than what is commonly imagined. This, beſides your own private Advantage, is the moſt noble *End* you could poſſibly aim at; and will, I am perſuaded, fire you with a Reſolution of being among the foremoſt in the Purſuit of Knowledge, and Practice of Virtue, which are naturally allied to each other.

I am with great Zeal,

Sir,

Your moſt faithful,

Humble Servant.

Hist. of Sci.
G22dw24
2-2-25
11276
2V.

TO THE READER.

THE firſt great Objection againſt the following Performance will be, that Matho *is made to ſpeak above his Years: But in this Caſe we ſhould, I think, moderate the Rigour of Criticiſm a little. The Deſign of Writing for the Uſe of young Perſons can only be, that they may underſtand what is ſaid, though they ſhould not be able at firſt to ſay the Things themſelves: If they could ſay the ſame Things there would be no Occaſion of Writing for their Uſe. In the Books, which are firſt put into our Hands when we go to School, Children are made to talk* Latin *prettily; not that Children can talk ſo, but that by Reading thoſe Things they may learn to talk ſo: And perhaps before a young Gentleman can talk as fine* Latin, *as Children are ſuppoſed to do there, he may be brought to think as juſtly as* Matho *is ſuppoſed to do here. After all, there is no common Standard in this Caſe; the ſame Difference may be obſerved between young Perſons of thirteen or fourteen, as between Men of thirty or forty. If I have been ſo for-*

tunate as to make it appear natural, that a young Gentleman might enter eaſily into the Subjects diſcourſed upon, by repreſenting them in a familiar Way, that will be the beſt Apology: But every Reader will be a better Judge of this than I am; and a young Reader a better Judge than one who knows the Things already, by the learned Methods of treating them.

There will, no Doubt, be other Objections, which I dare not pretend to anſwer; but muſt refer myſelf to the Indulgence of the judicious and candid Reader, who will beſt ſee the Difficulty of ſuch an Undertaking. A firſt Attempt *of this Nature muſt be many Ways imperfect: Yet, I think, the Method may be of ſuch Advantage, that it is worth While to make a Trial, and even that at the Hazard of Miſcarrying.*

THE

THE

CONTENTS.

The First CONFERENCE.

Matho, *a Boy of a fine Genius, desires his Friend* Philon *to explain, and, if possible, bring within the reach of a Boy's Capacity some things in Philosophy, concerning the Heavens and the Earth; such, to wit, as were most necessary to be known, and likewise pleasant: That those of his Age might the sooner accustom themselves to the Contemplation of Truth, and the Study of Nature, instead of passing the first Stage of their Lives in the Study of Words only: Whereupon they enter on the Consideration of the spherical Figure of the Earth, and the Nature of Gravity.* Page 1.

The

The CONTENTS.

The Second CONFERENCE.

The ſpherical Figure of the Earth demonſtrated from other Arguments: Of the Uſefulneſs and Neceſſity of Mountains: Of the Magnitude of the Earth and Moon: Of the Diſtances of the Moon and Sun from the Earth. The Abſurdity of ſuppoſing the Heavens and whole Frame of Nature to whirl round in four and twenty Hours: That inſtead of this monſtrous Converſion, the Earth only performs a Revolution on its own Axis in the ſame Time. The Order and periodical Revolutions of the Planets in the Solar Syſtem. Page 38.

The Third CONFERENCE.

Objections againſt the diurnal Motion of the Earth on its Axis anſwered. The Difference between abſolute and relative, true and apparent Motion, familiarly explained. Of the Magnitude of the Sun in reſpect to the Earth. A Reaſon why the Sun ſhould be ſo big. The Arguments which ſhew the annual Motion *of the Earth. How that Motion is known by the Stars in the Night Time. That the great Changes in Nature, with reſpect to us, are owing to the diurnal and annual Motions*

tions of the Earth. How the Viciſſitudes of the Seaſons, *and lengthening or ſhortening of the Days and Nights are cauſed by theſe two Motions.* Page 97.

The Fourth CONFERENCE.

From the Conſideration of the Beauty *and* Order *of the Planetary Syſtem* Matho *is led to enquire how it began at firſt to be; or who was the* Author *of ſuch a Work? The Reaſons are laid down, by which this may be diſcovered. That the Planets are conſtantly impelled by two diſtinct Forces, without which they could not revolve in Orbits about the Sun: That any Body of itſelf reſiſts to revolve about a Center: That* Gravitation, *and the* Attraction *of* Coheſion, *cannot be the Effects of Matter, or any mechanical Cauſe, ſhewn from Variety of Arguments. Hence* Matho *diſcovers that theſe Effects muſt proceed from the immediate Power of the Deity. The* Unity *and* abſolute Perfections *of the Supreme Being deduced in a plain and natural Way.* Page 157.

The

The CONTENTS.

The Fifth CONFERENCE.

The Conſequences of the Inactivity of Matter, conſider'd with Reſpect to the Productions in and about our Earth.—Matter owes its Origin to an immaterial Being. The ſimple Exiſtence of material Subſtance ſhews the infinite Power, *and the various Species of Things formed out of it, the* Wiſdom *and* Goodneſs *of this Being. That any Sort of Matter we know hath paſſed through divers Operations, and various Art, before it falls within our Knowledge. The imperceptible Tranſlations from dead Matter to vegetating Bodies. From the moſt imperfect* Plant *to* Man, *Vegetables and Animals riſe in a continued* Scale *of Perfection. Propagation of Plants and Animals by Seeds, not mechanical: Or the Seed not the Cauſe of the future Plant, nor the former Plant the Seed. The one appointed to follow the other, in order to conſtitute a ſettled Courſe of Nature. Hence an* eternal Succeſſion of Cauſes and Effects, *a groundleſs and unphiloſophical Suppoſition. The mutual Aptitudes, Relations, and Connexions between the Parts of the* Scale, *ſhew the Unity of Deſign. This ſhewn in the Article of* Food. *Of the ſucceſſive* Evolution *of Bodies, in the Formation of many Species of winged Inſects. That all*

theſe

theſe inferior Creatures operate blindly, and yet regularly; or are directed by a Principle, more perfect than the Reaſon of Mankind. Monſtrous Productions occaſioned by Accidents, diſturbing the regular Proceſs in the Formation of animal Bodies, according to the ſettled Courſe of Nature. Page 239, 240.

The Sixth CONFERENCE.

Conſequences from the Subject of the laſt Conference. That it doth not belong to any Power to make Matter a ſelf-moving Subſtance: Such Suppoſitions proceed from our Ignorance, in joining together in our own Imagination inconſiſtent Effects. The Folly of appealing to Omnipotence in ſuch Caſes, or where other Proofs may be had, which are more within our Reach. Hence all the Motions in the Univerſe are owing immediately to an immaterial Cauſe. Of the ſeveral Motions in the animal Body, on each of which Life depends. The various Motions produced by the Deity in vegetable and animal Bodies, may be called mechanical, *becauſe of their Conſtancy and Regularity, and the infinite Fineneſs of the Effect. Of ſpontaneous Motion. The greateſt Part of ſpontaneous Motion mechanical in this Senſe. Two diſtinct Powers, or two different* Motives *concur to produce ſpontaneous Motion.*

Motion. Of the human and brute Soul. The moſt perfect Brutes irrational: Nothing more confirms this Opinion, than the Objections that are brought againſt it. Of Reaſon *and* Inſtinct. *The wonderful Nature of Inſtinct. This the Connexion between the vegetating and animated Parts of the Scale of Being. The Miſery it muſt be to Mankind, if Brutes reaſoned. The different Structure of Body does not make the human Soul rational. Eternal Truths diſcover to us, immediately and by themſelves, an eternal Intellect,* &c. Page 326, 327.

MATHO:

MATHO:

OR, THE

Coſmotheoria Puerilis,

A DIALOGUE, &c.

The firſt Meeting.

Matho, *a Boy of a fine Genius, deſires his Friend* Philon *to explain, and, if poſſible, bring within the reach of a Boy's Capacity ſome things in Philoſophy, concerning the Heavens and the Earth; ſuch, to wit, as were moſt neceſſary to be known, and likewiſe pleaſant: That thoſe of his Age might the ſooner accuſtom themſelves to the Contemplation of Truth, and the Study of Nature, inſtead of paſſing the firſt Stage of their Lives in the Study of Words only: Whereupon they enter on the Conſideration of the ſpherical Figure of the Earth, and the Nature of Gravity.*

MATHO, PHILON.

The firſt Conference.

M. I Am glad, *Philon*, I have met with you.

P. Upon what Account, *Matho*?

M. There are ſome things I am very deſirous of knowing, nor have I Confidence to addreſs myſelf to any other Perſon than you, of whoſe Friendſhip I have had ſo many Proofs.

The firſt Conference.

P. If I can aſſiſt you in any thing, you may be aſſured of my Inclinations.

M. But perhaps I may be troubleſom to you with my childiſh Fancies.

P. You cannot be troubleſom to one who is glad to ſerve you; and beſides, the Matter ſeems to be of Conſequence.

M. To me it is, if that were enough to make you think it deſerved your Attention.

P. It ſhall be enough, I aſſure you, to make me think it worth my moſt ſerious Attention.

M. Tell me therefore, *Philon*, in the firſt place, could you bring down ſome part of your Knowledge to my Capacity?

P. I cannot tell that; but this I can aſſure you, that I'll do my beſt to make you underſtand in ſome meaſure any thing I know my ſelf. But you ſeem to have conceived much too high an Opinion of my Knowledge.

II. *M.* My Father, and ſeveral of our Friends, frequently tell me I am troubleſom with my idle Queſtions: Wherefore they either ſend me away with a Joke, or bid me mind my Grammar and Parts of Speech for ſome time, and not meddle with philoſophical Matters, till I am ſix or ſeven Years older; for that theſe Subjects cannot be underſtood till one has attained to ſeventeen or eighteen Years of Age. Now I ſhould be glad to know, if there may not be a Method of teaching *Boys* what they are fond of learning; or if any one can have a Curioſity to know what he has not yet a Capacity to underſtand? *P.* Cer-

P. Certainly, *Matho*, an earneſt Deſire of knowing any thing promiſes a Readineſs of Conception; becauſe an Uneaſineſs under Ignorance quickens the Apprehenſion, and makes the Mind attentive to catch any Hint: But notwithſtanding this, you muſt begin with the firſt Principles of Things, and ſuch as are neceſſary to lay a right Foundation; for moſt People are deſirous to be taught, but cannot beſtow the neceſſary Application. The firſt Conference.

M. You even increaſe the Earneſtneſs of my Deſire, ſince I find you are of the ſame Opinion with myſelf. However, though perhaps I may not yet be capable of comprehending the Reaſons of many Things, I would nevertheleſs know the Things themſelves as they are: There being a great Difference, as I think, between having one's Head ſtuffed with the ſilly Notions of the Vulgar, and having firſt been told the Truth of the Caſe, as it really ſtands.

P. Nor is it indeed Matter of Differe[nce], *Matho*, whether *Truth* or *Error* firſt take[s] in the Minds of Men. Wherefore the [pu]ſimple Truth is to be laid open to [the] ſons, as ſoon as they begin to turn [the]on any Subject; and the Point is [to] ed, when it can be done, with Compariſons as ſuit their Age, or [be] der their Obſervation. For unleſ[s] thus early tinctured with Truth, fall into abſurd Notions concer[ning] they obſerve; and contract ſuch [Ha]they are ſcarce ever able to get [rid]

he firſt nference.

M. You will therefore give me your Aſſiſtance in this Affair, on a double Account; both to help me to avoid this Inconvenience, and alſo to relieve me from a preſent Uneaſineſs: Wherefore leaving farther Preambles, I ſhall freely tell you the Things which frequently occur to my Mind, and often perplex my Thoughts.

III. I ſee the Heavens over my Head, and tread on the Earth with my Feet; but I am at a Loſs what to think of that *mighty Concave* above me, or even of this very Earth I walk upon. I often think whether the Earth may not ſtretch out in breadth to Immenſity, ſo that if one was to travel it over, one ſhould never be able to get to the *end* of the Earth, but always find room to continue the Journey: Nor can I ſatisfy myſelf as to the Depth of the Earth, whether it hath any Bottom: and if ſo, what it is that can be below the Earth. As to the Heaven, I need ſay nothing: Every Change that happens, and every Object ſeen there, perplexes me with Doubts and fruitleſs Gueſſes. I often wonder how the Sun moves over ſo large a Space every Day, and yet ſeems not to ſtir out of its Place. I would know where he goes beyond the Mountains in the Evening; what becomes of him in the Night Time; whether he makes his Way through the Thickneſs of the Earth, or the Depth of the Sea, and ſo always ſhews himſelf again from the Eaſt the next Morning. It ſeems ſtrange that being ſo ſmall a Body as he is, he ſhould be ſeen every where, and

ſtill

ſtill of the ſame Bigneſs. The various Nature of the Moon ſeems yet more perplexing: To Night perhaps you can ſcarce diſcern her: but in a few Days ſhe becomes larger than the Body of the Sun itſelf: In a little time after ſhe decays, and at laſt wears quite away; yet ſhe recovers again. In a word, ſhe is never the ſame, and yet ſtill becoming what ſhe was before. What means that Multitude of Stars ſcattered over the Face of the whole Sky, whoſe Number is ſo great that it is become proverbial!—There are other things, *Philon*, I want to be informed of; but theſe are the main Difficulties, which exerciſe my Thoughts, and perplex my Mind with endleſs Doubting. We are bid to be ſilent with our Doubts concerning theſe Matters, which chiefly ſtrike a Boy's Mind with Admiration, and raiſe his Curioſity: We are bid to be content with our Ignorance for not a few Years, till we become as it were habituated to a Want of Knowledge; till the uneaſy Senſe ariſing from Curioſity, and unſatisfied Deſire, has loſt it's Edge.

IV. *P.* You have reckoned up a good many Particulars, *Matho*, of which ſome are more difficult to be known than others: Of ſome of them even Men themſelves are yet ignorant, ſo that thoſe of your Age cannot be ſuppoſed to know them. However, I am not without Hopes but that you may receive ſome ſort of Satisfaction as to the greateſt part of your Doubts. But what Boy of a thouſand is it, to whom his Ignorance in theſe points gives the leaſt trouble?

The firſt Conference.

M. Forgive me, *Philon*, you have perhaps been ſo earneſt in your Purſuits, ſince you became a Man, that you have forgot what paſt in your Mind when you were a Boy. We are ſometimes cloyed even with our own Diverſions, and ſeek Relief from ſomething elſe: We walk then by two's or three's, or lye down perhaps upon the Graſs. At thoſe Times the Heavens offer themſelves to our Eyes and Minds, when thus unoccupied with any thing elſe; our Ignorance creates our Wonder, and we are under no Reſtraint in diſcovering our Thoughts to each other. Every Thing is a Difficulty to us, and we endeavour to ſolve our Doubts by Conjectures, which are certainly ridiculous enough, if you Men were to over-hear them.

P. And yet I obſerved you ſaid ſomething juſt now, while you were telling me your Difficulties, which looked like Obſervation and Experience.

M. Pray what was it?

P. How do you know *that the Sun, being*, as you ſay, *ſo ſmall a Body, does appear every where of the ſame Bigneſs?*

M. Why, we compare our Reaſons together, and ſometimes help one another out. One obſerves that a Houſe, if it were at ſeven or eight Miles Diſtance, could ſcarce be ſeen, or at moſt appear but very ſmall: Some of us have been at thirty or forty Miles Diſtance in the Country; we find the Sun appeared juſt as big there as here: And yet the Sun ſeems by no means ſo large as a Houſe. This ſeems ſtrange to

us;

us; for on enquiring we have the ſame Account from all our Comrades.

P. Very good, *Matho*, I hope your Doubts may be ſo much the more eaſily ſatisfied, as you are thus ſolicitous to have them removed. It is a Happineſs where the Deſire of Knowledge becomes a ſort of Diſeaſe; for then we greedily liſten to the Reaſons of Things, as affording us a proper Remedy for this Uneaſineſs of the Mind.

V. As to the Earth, that we may begin from thence, it is neither ſtretched out into an immenſe Breadth, as you imagined, nor is it deep without Limits, but bounded on all Sides; and is nearly of a ſpherical Figure.

M. You mean it hath a round Figure like that of a Globe, or that perhaps the Earth itſelf is a huge Globe.

P. That is my Meaning.

M. How, I pray, is that known? For this round Figure of the Earth would remove my Difficulties, as to its infinite Breadth, or bottomleſs Depth; but it raiſes other Doubts no leſs perplexing to one's Mind.

P. What are they?

M. How can the Earth, if thus bounded, and detach'd from every thing elſe, reſt without ſomething to ſupport and keep it up? Why doth it not fall downward? By what Force do the *under-parts* of it ſtick cloſe to the *upper*?——

P. Suſpend a little, if you pleaſe, your Enquiry into the Reaſons of Things, or *why they are* ſo, till you are once certain of the Facts, or

firſt rence. *that they are really ſo.* Wherefore tell me, *Matho*, have you never heard that the Globe of the Earth hath been ſailed round?

M. I have indeed heard this in Diſcourſe, but did not underſtand the Meaning of that *ſailing round:* I imagined it might be as when a Man is ſaid to *ride round* a Country, or *walk round* a Field.

P. Well, but if a Ship ſhould ſet ſail from a Port, ſteering weſtward, and ſtill keeping on the ſame Courſe, ſhould return again from the Eaſt into the ſame Port whence ſhe had ſet out, what would you think of the Figure of the Earth from *ſuch ſailing round?*

M. If indeed the Ship ſtill kept the ſame Courſe, and yet returned, from the oppoſite Side, into the Harbour whence ſhe had firſt ſet ſail, ſhe muſt, I think, have gone round the whole Circuit of the Earth. For, (if I may explain my Conceptions of this Matter by a low Compariſon) it is as if ſome little Reptile, an *Ant* for Inſtance, ſhould travel round a wooden Bowl in her creeping Pace, going off toward the right Hand, and returning from the left.

P. Your Compariſon expreſſes the Caſe clearly, and contracts the tedious Voyage of the Ship into the ſhorter Journey of the little Inſect. But if the Earth were either endleſly broad, or deep without bottom; or if it reſted on any thing as a *Baſis* or *Support*, and that *Thing* upon another, and ſo on; if, I ſay, that were the Caſe, could the Earth, think you, be ſailed round? or the Ship return from the oppoſite ſide into the ſame Port? *M.* In

M. In that Caſe, indeed, I do not ſee that either the Ship could return into the ſame Port, or the Sun himſelf go round ſuch an immenſe, ſhapeleſs Earth, to the Eaſt again, as he does every Morning. But poſſibly the Earth may be round only about the middle parts of it, that is, towards the *Eaſt* and *Weſt*, ſo that it might be ſailed quite round there, while it runs out in length toward the *South* and *North*.

P. How far would you have it to run out that Way?

M. I cannot tell.

P. It is the Intenſeneſs of the Cold only, *Matho*, about the *Poles* of the Earth, as they are called, that hinders Navigators from ſailing round the Earth that Way alſo; and not the Figure of the Earth at all: For if we travel to a conſiderable Diſtance, either ſouthward or northward, ſtill new Parts of the Heaven are diſcovered, and ſeem to riſe higher before us, while the Parts behind us ſeem to ſink down, and fall under the Earth; which could not happen, if the Earth extended infinitely South and North: Nay, on the contrary, which may perhaps ſeem ſtrange to you, the Globe of the Earth is more plain about thoſe parts, than about the Middle of it.

M. You mean it is flatter, or leſs protuberant about thoſe Poles.

P. That is it.

M. It may be ſo; but let me conſider a little with myſelf, if I can apprehend the Force of this ſecond Argument,——It ſeems to be, as if the

The firſt Conference.

the little Inſect I mentioned juſt now ſhould proceed, not from the right Hand towards the left, but creep ſtraight forward in a middle Path betwixt both; for then it would diſcover ſome new Parts before itſelf, and loſe Sight of others behind, in the ſame manner as if it moved in the croſs Track.

P. You have it exactly: And hence it is that the Star, which is called the *Pole-Star*, is raiſed higher to us, if we travel northward, and falls lower if we go the contrary Way; ſinking gradually as we advance toward the South; for then a greater part of the Earth's Convexity comes between it and us: Thus it appears to be raiſed higher to us in *Britain*, than to thoſe in *France* and *Italy*, as our Country lies more northward.

M. I conceive it from the Example above: Therefore, if the Cold would allow us ſtill to advance northward, the Pole-Star would at length appear directly over our Heads; and on the contrary, by ſtill retiring towards the South, it would gradually ſeem to approach towards the Earth, and at laſt ſink below it.

P. You are perfectly right.

VI. Now from both Arguments put together, (that, to wit, which ſhews the Earth to be round from Eaſt to Weſt, and that which ſhews it to be round from South to North) what Sort of a Figure muſt it have, do you think?——

M. But is it certain that it hath been thus ſailed round? *P.* It

P. It is beyond all Queſtion; the *Engliſh*, *Dutch*, *Spaniards*, *French*, &c. have often ſailed round the Globe of the Earth: Nor hath the Voyage for many Years back been reckoned a Matter of great Difficulty. The firſt Conference.

M. A Thing then ſo often performed, cannot, it ſeems, well be denied.

P. Certainly it cannot, unleſs we would expoſe ourſelves by a ridiculous doubting of plain Fact; nor therefore can we deny that which is as certain as this Navigation itſelf.

M. What is that, I pray you?

P. That thoſe Navigators, while they were in the oppoſite Part of the Globe, beheld the Heavens over their Head, and ſaw the Sun and Stars perform their Courſes, the ſame Way as in their own Country: For in all Parts *Night* and *Day* regularly ſucceeded each other.

M. The Heavens therefore ſurround the Earth on all Sides, it ſeems.

P. Undoubtedly.

M. And the Sun by Night ſhines to other Mortals.

P. It is ſo; for when he ſets to us, which you agreeably enough called *going behind the Mountains*, he riſes to other Parts of the Earth. And where-ever he appears he makes it *Day* by his chearful Rays ſpread on that Part of the Globe, while the oppoſite Side is covered with *Night* and Darkneſs.

M. The Sun then muſt move round the whole Earth every Day.

P. He ſeems at leaſt ſo to perform his Courſe from Eaſt to Weſt. *M.* What,

The firſt Conference.

M. What, *Philon!* doth he not really perform this Courſe?

P. How Things are in Reality you will ſee afterward: Therefore ſuſpend your Judgment at preſent, till Arguments determine you to one Side.

VII. *M.* I ſhall endeavour to obey you; However, be that as it will, you have not yet removed my Difficulties: For tell me, are there any Inhabitants in the Part of the Earth juſt oppoſite to us?

P. There either are, or at leaſt may be Men directly oppoſite to us.

M. They walk then with their Heads hanging downward; in which caſe what can hinder them from falling down altogether?

P. How would you, *Matho*, anſwer that Queſtion, if thoſe Men argued thus concerning you? For they have the very ſame Reaſon to be afraid leſt you ſhould fall off from the Earth.

M. It cannot be that any one ſhould *fall upward*, or towards Heaven; that would be to be *raiſed on high*, not to fall downward.

P. Very right; now they can give the ſame Reaſon, *viz.* That they could not *fall upward*, or towards Heaven; ſince that could only be by being raiſed on high, which you ſay is not *falling*. And ſince the Heaven is over their Heads, as much as it is over ours, to fall from their Part of the Earth would be to be carried aloft, as much as it is here with us. In a Word,

a Word, towards the Earth is *downward*, and towards the Heaven *upward*, on whatever Part of the Globe we ſtand.

M. I know not well what to ſay to this; I have nothing to object to your Argument; and yet it doth not convince me.

P. It frequently thus happens, *Matho*; Prejudices which we take early up are not to be overcome in an inſtant, eſpecially if the Point be ſuch as we conceive impoſſible to be otherwiſe than it appears to us. But tell me, do you allow that a Ship may ſail round the Earth?

M. Why ſhould I not allow a Thing which Experience ſhews to be matter of Fact?

P. Why therefore are you not afraid leſt the Ship, while ſhe is in the oppoſite Part of the Ocean, ſhould fall out of the Sea? Or rather, why do you not ſuppoſe that the Water of the Sea itſelf ſhould fly off to the Clouds, Ship and all together?

M. Indeed I think there would be Danger of it: And ſince it does not, I want to know the Cauſe.

P. What is it that hinders a Ship in this Part of the Globe from falling from the Sea up to the Clouds?

M. Her Weight.

P. And whither doth her Weight tend?

M. Towards the Earth.

P. Right: Now the Weight of any Thing tends toward the Earth, even at the *Antipodes*; for ſo they are called who have their Feet oppoſite to ours. *M.* You

The first Conference.

M. You ſay then that their Weight carries heavy Things towards the Earth, *all round the Earth*; and therefore as much at the Antipodes as here?

P. I ſay ſo; and Experience ſhews this to be Fact, whatever the Cauſe of it may be.

M. And that therefore to tend toward the Earth is to *tend downward*, on whatever Part round the whole Earth the heavy Body be placed?

P. Certainly.

M. Nor can we ſay, if we would ſpeak accurately, that the Antipodes are below us, more than that we are below the Antipodes?

P. Surely we cannot: For if it requires a Force to raiſe a Stone, or any other Thing from the Earth, *there* as well as *here*; and if it falls back when left to itſelf, there as well as here; they muſt ſay as properly *it falls downward* there, as we ſay here. And you cannot ſuppoſe that our Mariners, when in the oppoſite part of the Ocean, feel leſs Difficulty in raiſing a Weight, than here in *Britain*; or that it would not fall back upon them, if left to itſelf.

M. Indeed, I ſee I cannot.

P. No Side of the Globe then can claim the Privilege of being the *upper Side*, or reckoning the oppoſite Part the *under Side* of the Earth.

M. I perceive now, that would be fooliſh, and ſeem to myſelf to have got a better Notion: So that if I were in thoſe Parts, and arguing with ſome unskillful Boy like myſelf, who ſuppoſed

poſed that *we here* were in Danger of falling from the Ground towards the Clouds, I could ſhew him, that he was in Pain for *us* as needleſsly as I had been for *them*, ſince our Weight preſſed us both equally to the Earth. The firſt Conference.

P. The Reaſon certainly is the ſame in both Caſes.

M. Nay, I believe I could hardly forbear laughing at his ſimplicity; as if we did not walk as ſecurely on the Ground here, as they do there. Which I ſee now would be in effect only laughing at my ſelf, and the ſilly Notions I had juſt a few Minutes ago.

P. It is not amiſs, *Matho*, to ſuppoſe ſometimes, that we have thus changed Sides in the Queſtion; for we more eaſily perceive our Miſtakes, when they are ſuppoſed to belong to another Perſon.

VIII. *M.* But tell me, which is the *loweſt Place* of all, below which nothing can be?

P. Now you begin to be too accurate, *Matho*; but you yourſelf will eaſily ſee, that the middle Point between us and the Antipodes, that is, the very center of the Earth, is the loweſt Point of all; at leaſt with reſpect to us.

M. For this Reaſon, I ſuppoſe, becauſe if there were a Paſſage to the Center of the Earth, a heavy Body falling down would be ſaid to *deſcend* thus far; and if it could go beyond the Center, it would begin to *aſcend* again, or riſe up towards the oppoſite Surface.

P. You

The firſt Conference.

P. You are perfectly right.

M. But becauſe there is no Paſſage to, or from the Center, whatever riſes ſtraight upward from the Surface of the Earth, either here with us, or at the Antipodes, or in any Part round the whole Globe, is ſaid to *aſcend*, as if it roſe from the Center or loweſt Point.

P. That is, indeed, the very Reaſon: For any thing, by receding from the Surface, muſt recede from the Center at the ſame Time, or increaſe the Diſtance between the Center and itſelf.

M. Thus far I underſtand then, that heavy Bodies, by tending to the Surface on all Sides, muſt therefore tend alſo the Center.

P. And hence it is that Water, which is both heavy and fluid, ſeeks always to a lower place, till it can get no farther.

M. But pray tell me, *Philon*, what is the Cauſe why heavy things tend to the Earth, even from oppoſite Sides of it, and by Motions contrary to each other? For from what you have already ſhewn me, it follows, that if there were a Hole through the whole Thickneſs of the Earth, as far as the Antipodes, and if two Stones were let down at the ſame time, one from our Side, and another from the oppoſite Mouth of the Hole, they would, by the ſame Gravity impelling them, run oppoſite to each other, and encounter at the Center.

P. Indeed, *Matho*, if you go on at this Rate, I'm afraid I muſt bid you farewell.

M. Why ſo, dear *Philon!*

P. Leſt

P. Leſt I ſhould be forced to own my Ignorance. The firſt Conference.

M. I wiſh I were able to bring you to that paſs.

P. I am not very far from it already.

M. I ſee well enough, *Philon*, what is the Meaning of this; you think that I could not underſtand the Cauſe of this Gravity of Bodies.

P. On my Word, I had no ſuch Thought: But I foreſee you will lead me very deep into theſe Matters.

M. We are at the Center of the Earth already: We can go no deeper than that Point.

P. You are diſpoſed to be pleaſant, *Matho*.

M. To be ſerious then; if you would complete your Favour to me, tell me the *true Cauſes* of Things, as well as the *Things themſelves*. If I ſhould not be able to comprehend them, you will loſe only a little Labour: But if I ſhould chance to underſtand any Thing, that will be a conſiderable Gain to me.

P. Well, but let us firſt conſider for a little, from ſome parallel Caſe, how Bodies thus tend to the Earth: That perhaps will bring us nearer the true Cauſe, and we may reſume the Queſtion at ſome other Time. Wherefore,

IX. Tell me; did you ever ſee a *Load-Stone?*

M. Not once, but often; and have frequently tried, by way of Diverſion with my Comrades, the ſtrange Virtue it has.

The firſt Conference.

P. You have obſerved it then to draw the *Iron* to itſelf?

M. Yes; and when it had brought it cloſe, it kept it there; ſo that it required ſome Force to ſeparate them again.

P. But did the Load-ſtone only attract the Iron in this Caſe?

M. Nay, the Iron drew the Load-ſtone with equal Strength, as it appeared to us: For if the Key, with which we made the Trial, were kept from moving towards it, the Load-ſtone came over the whole Diſtance between them, and applied itſelf to the Key, ſometimes one way, and ſometimes another.

P. There are indeed ſome Singularities in this Affair; but the Iron and Load-ſtone attracted each other mutually?

M. That ſeems to be the Caſe indeed: And certainly it is a moſt ſurpriſing Sight!

P. And yet ſcarce any thing is more common than ſuch a Sight.

M. How! ſuch a Sight as that common?

P. Did not you yourſelf obſerve juſt now, that two Stones, let down from oppoſite Parts, would ruſh violently to each other through the whole Thickneſs of the Earth? And that any Sort of Bodies, if there were a Paſſage for them thither, would run on till they met at the Center of the Earth? In ſhort that all heavy Bodies move directly to that Point, as far as they are allowed to move; ſince they move directly to the Surface of the Earth; of which various

various Motion from all different Parts, you ſo earneſtly deſired to know the Cauſe?

M. How thoughtleſs I am! But your mentioning the Load-Stone had put the Earth quite out of my Head.

P. Well then, is it any Thing leſs wonderful, do you think, that all Bodies round us ſhould ſo violently ruſh towards the ſame Point, than that the Iron and Load-Stone ſhould move to each other?

M. Truly, when I conſider the Matter ſeriouſly, I think it is no leſs wonderful; or rather that it is the ſame Wonder ten thouſand Times repeated. I know not how it comes to paſs, but we never think at all on the Subject.

P. Think of it then at your Leiſure.——

M. I find I can make nothing out by thinking. If all Bodies moved the ſame Way, ſuch Motion might appear natural to them: But when they ruſh directly againſt each other, how can that be natural?

P. You go rightly to work, *Matho*: It is a great Point gained, *to get a ſight of the Wonder*; to be awakened from that ſupine Thoughtleſſneſs which makes the Groſs of Mankind look on *Things aſtoniſhing* with Indifference, becauſe they ſee them conſtantly. Nor is there any thing in Nature more aſtoniſhing than this common Sight: For, that I may obſerve thus much to you by the way, This Action in Bodies of ruſhing ſo violently all to one Point, which we call *falling*, is not the Action or Effect of Matter itſelf.

The firſt Conference.

M. Of what other Thing then is it the Action?

P. Of what Thing do you think?

M. Of ſomething certainly that is not Matter.

P. You have hit on a right Diſtinction; wherefore let me earneſtly beſeech you, *Matho*, never to forget it.

M. I do not ſee the great Merit of hiting on a Diſtinction which was unavoidable: For if this Thing, which produces the Action of falling in Bodies, be not Matter itſelf, it muſt neceſſarily be ſomething different from Matter. But ſince you ſo earneſtly deſire me to remember it, I ſhall ſuppoſe ſomething of Importance is concealed under your Requeſt; ſo there will be no Danger of forgetting it.

X. *P.* Leaving it therefore at preſent, tell me, if there were many different Particles of Iron ſcattered up and down, would they not all, think you, meet together from the oppoſite Parts round about, by Means of the Magnet attracting them?

M. It ſeems probable they would *; for they muſt yield to that Force which moves a greater Quantity.

* *Des Cartes* has a curious Experiment of this; but draws a wrong Argument from the Appearance. *Si paullo curioſius conſideramus, quo pacto limatura ferri circa magnetem ſe diſponat, multa ejus ope advertemus, quæ hactenus dicta confirmabunt, &c.* Princip. Part. IV. §. 179.

P. And

P. And if there were two or more Load-Stones, would not they likewiſe draw each other?

M. I ſuppoſe they muſt †; and it is reaſonable to think that their Force would be increaſed by their Number.

P. If then we ſhould ſuppoſe the Magnets and Particles of Iron to be multiplied to any Number, or increaſed to any Quantity; what do you think would be the reſult?

M. They would all, I ſuppoſe, meet and make up one Magnitude or Bulk, which would afterwards ſtick cloſe together by the ſame Force that brought the Parts firſt into Contact: For the Key and Load-Stone never part, till they are forced aſunder.

P. What if any Particle of this Bulk were by ſome external Cauſe disjoined from the reſt?

M. I imagine it would fall back again, the reſt by their united Power retracting it.

XI. *P.* Obſerve how much you have granted me.

M. I do not well know what you mean by this.

P. Conſider with yourſelf a little, whether what we have been ſpeaking of juſt now might not be applied to make you conceive what we were ſpeaking of before, concerning heavy Bodies moving towards the Center of the Earth.——

† See *ibid.* §. 152.

The firſt Conference.

M. Now indeed I perceive what it is you intend. You mean that the Earth attracts to itſelf all Bodies in the ambient Space; and is mutually attracted by them: Juſt as the Magnet draws, and is drawn by the ſmall Particles of Iron.

P. If then all the Parts of this our Earth were endued with ſuch a Power of mutually attracting each other; do you think there would be need of any other *Support*, or *Foundation*, on which the Weight of the whole might reſt?

M. Let me conſider this Queſtion a little, before I pretend to anſwer it.——You ſay, *If all the Parts of the Earth were endued with ſuch a Power of mutually attracting each other.* I ſee plainly by their falling back, that the Earth attracts Bodies raiſed to any Height from it; but it is not ſo plain that *all* the Parts of the Earth attract each other, when they are at reſt in the Earth itſelf.

P. Reflect a little, *Matho*; does not the ſame Attraction, that draws Bodies back to the Earth, keep them ſtill at reſt there, juſt as it is in the Particles of Iron ſticking cloſe to the Magnet, which you yourſelf obſerved?

M. Pardon this Inattention: I ſee it muſt be ſo.

P. Have not all Bodies Weight, as much when they lie on the Ground, as when they are hanging in a Balance?

M. They

M. They have; otherwiſe it ſhould require no Force to raiſe them from the Ground.

P. Is what we call *Weight* or *Gravity* in Bodies, any other Thing than the conſtant Force of this Attraction?

M. It is nothing elſe but the Force that draws them back to the Earth, and keeps them there.

P. Can you ſuppoſe that any Bodies through the whole Maſs of the Earth have no Weight?

M. I conceive they all have Weight, ſince it would require a Force to raiſe them from the Place they are in.

P. If then Weight be nothing but the conſtant Force of Attraction; and if all Parts through the whole Maſs of the Earth have Weight; is it not the ſame as to ſay that all the Parts of the Earth are attracted?

M. There is no denying it.

P. But if each Part be attracted, muſt it not be attracted by the reſt?

M. Certainly it muſt.

P. And if this be true of every Part ſeparately (that it is attracted, and attracted by the reſt) will not that ſhew, that every Part is both *attracted*, and *attracts* the reſt?

M. This Queſtion is too intricate for me to ſee through.

P. In this Caſe you may ſuppoſe the Parts to be great or ſmall: Now if you conceive the Earth to conſiſt only of two Parts, will not each half attract the other, and be attracted by it?

The firſt Conference.

M. Without Doubt.

P. And if you conceive three Parts in it only, will not each attract, and be attracted by the other two?

M. That is equally plain.

P. Juſt ſo, if you ſuppoſe only four Parts in the Earth, any one of them is attracted by the other three; and any three of them join to attract the fourth.

M. I perceive now the Method; you may go on at this Rate for any Number of Parts poſſible, ſtill proving that any one attracts all the reſt, and is attracted by them. And truly it is wonderful that any the leaſt Particle of Matter in the Earth ſhould attract all the reſt, let them be as many as can be imagined.

P. I am glad, *Matho*, this Obſervation did not eſcape you; the Thing is not only wonderful, but *aſtoniſhing*: Nor was it ſtrange that you did not perceive, at firſt View, what requires Exerciſe and Variety of Thought to be rightly apprehended. Let me alſo aſk you this Queſtion, which may perhaps give you another View of this Particular: Can any Body be attracted by another, and not mutually attract *that* by which it is attracted?

M. I do not really ſee the Neceſſity why a Body by being attracted ſhould attract; and yet I believe it muſt be ſo, from what you have ſaid above.

P. Take it thus then: Can a Body adhere or cleave to any other Body, and yet that other not adhere to it?

M. I

M. I ſee the Neceſſity in this Caſe.

P. But do not Bodies adhere to each other by the ſame Force that firſt brings them together?

M. They do.

P. Then a Body cannot be attracted without attracting, nor attract without being attracted. If the contrary were poſſible, it would require ſome Degree of Force to ſeparate the *attracted Body* from the other, ſince it was drawn by a certain Force: And yet it would require no Degree of Force to ſeparate *that other* from it, becauſe that was drawn by no Force: That is, it would require Force to ſeparate the Iron from the Magnet, but no Force to ſeparate the Magnet from the Iron.

M. That is both abſurd in common Senſe, and falſe in Fact. And thus I ſee that any the leaſt Particle, by being attracted by the whole Bulk of the Earth, muſt *neceſſarily* attract that whole Bulk, or every individual Particle in it: Which again ſurprizes me to conſider how *manifold* the *Action* muſt be from any one Particle, to an inconceivable Number of other Particles. And I am ſatisfied already that ſuch *manifold Action* cannot be the *Work* of the little Particle itſelf.

P. You prevent me agreeably, *Matho*, in making the proper Obſervations as we go along. But tell me, is not the attracting of the whole Earth the united Attractions of all its Parts?

M. It

The firſt Conference.

M. It is, as much as the Weight of an Body is the united Weight of all its Parts: Fo as Weight does not differ from Attraction, neither does the Earth differ from all its Part

P. If the Earth then had but half as muc Matter in it, (or half as many Parts) woul our Bodies be equally heavy towards it, as a preſent?

M. They muſt certainly be much lighter

P. And if it had twice as much Matter would the Gravity of Bodies be the ſame?

M. They ſhould be much heavier.

P. Can Gravity or Weight therefore belong to Body itſelf; which may be thus leſſened or increaſed, without any Change of Matter happening to the Body?

M. I ſee clearly it cannot, and that the *Action of falling* is not the Action of the Stone that falls.

P. But may it not be ſuppoſed to be the Action of the Matter of the Earth, towards which the Stone falls?

M. It cannot, if the Obſervation which I made juſt now, and which you likewiſe approved of, be right: For the ſmall Particles, of which the Maſs of the Earth conſiſts, cannot conſpire from *all Places*, towards every *particular Place*, to produce Gravity in every Thing that falls, nay, in every Thing that hath Weight. To ſuppoſe *every Particle* acting *every way* is inconceivable. Such manifold and diſtant Actions, as I ſaid, cannot be the *work of* theſe *little Things*.

P. You

P. You are in the right, *Matho, nothing can act where it is not*; nor therefore can theſe Atoms act at thouſands of Miles round them.

M. I think now I underſtand the Nature of Attraction better; only tell me, ſince all Bodies in the Earth mutually attract each other, why do we not obſerve this in any two Bodies; two Stones, for inſtance?

P. The Force whereby they tend to the Earth is incomparably greater than that Force whereby they tend to one another; wherefore the ſtronger Force overcomes the weaker, and renders it inobſervable.

M. I ſee indeed it muſt be ſo.

P. And yet in ſome Circumſtances, their attracting one another is perceptible.

M. Pray tell me in what Circumſtances?

P. If you take a Veſſel of Water, and put into it ſome ſmall Bits of Cork, or other light Bodies, not at great Diſtances from each other, and ſo as not to diſturb the Water in putting them in; you will ſee them attract each other, and meet: And if one Piece be conſiderably larger than the reſt, by moving it gently with the Point of a Pin, you will ſee it draw the reſt after it, wherever it goes.

M. This I ſhall try, as ſoon as I go to my Chamber. The Sight muſt be amuſing, and ſeems to confirm what you have ſaid.

P. It does: For though theſe little Bodies attract each other when lying at like Diſtances on the Ground, yet their Attraction cannot be then obſerved.

M. It

The firſt Conference.

M. It is not to be expected, ſince they have not any liquid Thing to ſwim in.

XII. *P.* I ſuppoſe you can now anſwer the Queſtion I put to you before.

M. Pray put it again?

P. It was this, If all the Parts of this our Earth are endued with a Power of mutually attracting each other; in that Caſe, would there be need of any other *Support* or *Foundation*, on which the whole might reſt?

M. I ſee plainly there would not; for the Weight of the Whole appears now nothing more, than the mutual Endeavour of all the Parts to come as near together as poſſible: Or, if I may expreſs myſelf ſo, the Weight of the whole now diſappears, or tends only to its own Center. So that regarding no external Thing from without, but only this mutual Embrace, or Contact from within, by that alone it remains firmly ſettled and immoveable.

P. You therefore ſee how this mighty Ball of the Earth may remain in the free Space, without tending to any Side; *poiſed by its own Weight*, as the Poet ſays; that is, poiſed by the internal Balance of its own Attraction.

M. I ſee, O *Philon!* and that with inexpreſſible Pleaſure, this *mighty Ball* poiſed in the middle of the Heavens, with the Stars encompaſſing it on all Sides: For many of my childiſh Fancies are at once diſpelled. The Sun is not plunged in the Ocean, nor pierces through a blind Maſs of Earth; but travelling unweariedly

unweariedly round, illuſtrates ſucceſſively the oppoſite Sides of the Globe, while the Shades and Duſk of Night fly before his Beams, and only cover the Regions which he hath left behind.

P. I eaſily gueſs, *Matho*, at what paſſes in your Mind: To come at a View of the true Conſtitution of Nature begets a *manly* and *rational Pleaſure* in the Soul, quite different from the Pleaſure you find in Diverſions, or any other Thing.

M. O! they are not to be compared!

P. Likewiſe if the Sun illuſtrates ſucceſſively the oppoſite Parts of the Globe ——

M. The enlightened Side moves always weſtward: He is but riſing in the Eaſt to ſome, while he is already ſetting low in the Weſt to others: And it is twelve a Clock to ſome Part or other of the Earth all the four and twenty Hours round. —— But while I conſider in my own Mind this ſurprizing Nature of Attraction, and the Inſtance of the Load-Stone and Particle of Irons, I think I ſee ſomething farther, which might be inferred from it.

P. Pray, what is that?

M. May we not conclude that, as all the Particles of this terreſtrial Maſs, endued with this mutual Tendency to each other, make the Earth one firm and ſtable Globe; ſo the Particles of any other leſs Body, the Load-Stone itſelf, or Iron, for Inſtance, having a like

The firſt Conference.

like Force or Tendency to one another, make that a ſolid and firm Body?

P. You carry your Views rightly enough, *Matho*, from the one Caſe to the other: Perſons of more Years and Experience are not always ſo happy.

M. There ſeems to be a Sort of Affinity between them, which directs one's Mind from the one to the other: For in both Caſes leſſer Parts, by attracting others mutually, make up a greater Body.

P. But what would you ſay, if it were objected that any Particle, how little ſoever, is made up ſtill of leſs Particles?

M. Provided *all* the Particles are endued with this Force of mutual Attraction, it is of ſmall Conſequence, I think, what Bulk they are ſuppoſed to be of: For he, who aſcribes Attraction to *all* the Parts, denies it of *none*.

P. You are in the Right; and there are ſtronger Reaſons to be given for this Inference of yours, than we can at preſent conveniently enter upon: Only in the mean Time I ſhall tell you, that the firſt of theſe Forces, whereby Bodies tend to the Center of the Earth, is called *Gravitation*; and the other, whereby the Parts of particular Bodies cleave ſo cloſely together, is called the *Attraction of Cohesion*.

M. I underſtand; for theſe Names are appoſite enough, and imply the different Effect in both Caſes.

P. But are both Sorts of Attraction, think you, equally ſtrong?

M. Let

M. Let me conſider your Queſtion a little——certainly they are not; for I know I can eaſily raiſe a Pebble from the Ground; that is, I can eaſily get the better of its Gravitation: But the firm Coheſion of its Parts I can neither overcome by Strength nor Art. The firſt Conference.

P. But is this Coheſion of Parts equally ſtrong in all Sorts of Bodies?

M. That is to aſk, if *Glaſs* and *Iron*, or *Wax* and *Braſs*, be equally firm Bodies.

P. To what Cauſe then would you aſcribe this Coheſion of Parts?

M. Not to Matter itſelf ſurely.

P. Why ſo?

M. Becauſe if Matter cannot do that which is leſs, or effect *Gravitation* in itſelf, it can much leſs do that which is greater, or produce in itſelf the ſtronger Effort of *Coheſion*.

P. It is certain, *Matho*, both Sorts of Attraction are effected in Matter by the ſame *immaterial Cauſe*, which I hope in Time you will diſcover; but there is ſtill another remarkable Difference between them, which it is proper you ſhould be acquainted with at preſent.

M. Pray is it poſſible for me to find it out myſelf, by your aſking me Queſtions as you did before?

P. I believe it may; wherefore tell me, do the Particles in a Stone cohere more firmly the larger the Stone is?

M. I do not think they do.

P. Your Reaſon?

M. Becauſe

The firſt Conference.

M. Becauſe I ſee a ſmall Stone or piece of Iron as hard as if it were ten or a hundred Times bigger.

P. Is then this Attraction of Coheſion mutual between all the Particles of ſuch Bodies, or only between the Particles that touch each other?

M. Only between the Particles that touch each other, I ſuppoſe; otherwiſe the Hardneſs of a Body would be increaſed with its Bulk. And now I fancy I perceive the *Difference* you intended to acquaint me with.

P. To wit?

M. Whereas the Attraction of Gravitation is mutual between all the Particles of Matter in the whole Earth, the Attraction of Coheſion is only between the contiguous Parts of Bodies.

P. That was the very Thing: And as in the former Caſe you juſtly admired the infinite Multiplicity of Action from any one Particle to every other Atom in the whole terreſtrial Globe; ſo— —

M. Pray hold, and let me conſider the Thing myſelf.—— The Multiplicity of the Action in that Caſe is indeed aſtoniſhing and almoſt incomprehenſible: And in this of Coheſion it is, I think, equally wonderful, that the Action, though ſimple, ſhould yet be exceedingly more ſtrong.

P. There is ſurely an inconceivable Art diſcovered to us, in adjuſting theſe Forces, if we would but reflect: But this likewiſe is wonder-

wonderful, *Matho*, that the one Sort of theſe Actions doth not interfere with, or diſturb the other. The Particles of the Iron or Stone, that have an Action directed to every Atom in the whole Maſs of Matter in the Earth, and therefore to the very Particles in Contact with them, have yet a ſtronger Action directed to thoſe very contiguous Particles, whereby they adhere to each other with almoſt an inſuperable Force. And theſe Actions, though in the ſame Direction, could not be preſerved more diſtinct, if thoſe ſmall Atoms had been even large enough to allow Pulleys and Engines to be fixt to them, and each of theſe wrought by a ſkilful Hand.

M. I can hardly expreſs how much you heighten my Admiration; and farther confirm to me, that ſuch prodigious Force, and Diſtinction of Degrees, can never be the *Work* of theſe little Atoms.

P. And then conſider what Inconveniencies would follow, if Bodies were hard in Proportion to their Bulk; which would certainly be the Caſe, if the latter Sort of Attraction were directed from every Particle to every Particle of Stone, Iron, *&c.*

M. Indeed then the Stone in the Quarry, or the Timber in the Tree would be impenetrable to human Induſtry: Or contrarily, if Bodies were ſoft and yielding, as they are ſmall, Artiſts could not only not give their Work that curious Fineneſs, but there could be no working in *Stone*, *Wood*, or *Metal*, without In-

The firſt Conference.

ſtruments exceeding in Bulk thoſe Materials; which is as much as to ſay, there could be no working in them at all. A *fine Edge* or *ſharp Point* would ſignify nothing, having the Softneſs of Wax, or ſomething more yielding.

P. And yet the greateſt Part of Mankind little think of theſe Advantages which we ſolely owe to the *Cauſe* which effects this Difference of Attraction in the ſeveral Parts of Matter; as if we owed them to *Chance*, or *Neceſſity*, or *nothing*.

M. That Cauſe is the Thing I chiefly want to be informed of: But if you pleaſe, I would conſider by my ſelf, and at Leiſure, the ſeveral Particulars we have already talk'd of, before we go farther.

P. It is very proper you ſhould do ſo.

M. But I ſhall take my leave of you only on theſe Terms, that we reſume our Subject after ſome Days.

P. If I can be of any Uſe to you, you ſhall find me willing at all Times.

THE
Second CONFERENCE.

The ſpherical Figure of the Earth demonſtrated from other Arguments: Of the Uſefulneſs and Neceſſity of Mountains: Of the Magnitude of the Earth and Moon: Of the Diſtances of the Moon and Sun from the Earth. The Abſurdity of ſuppoſing the Heavens and whole Frame of Nature to whirl round in four and twenty Hours: That inſtead of this monſtrous Converſion, the Earth only performs a Revolution on its own Axis in the ſame Time. The Order and periodical Revolutions of the Planets in the Solar Syſtem.

XIII. *M.* I Return to you, *Philon*, a perfect Convert to your new Doctrine, and value my Happineſs not a little in having got rid of ſome of my moſt childiſh Notions. Almoſt ever ſince I left you, I have been thinking of the wonderful Property of *Attraction*, and the ſpherical Figure of the Earth: But I have ſtill a ſmall Difficulty with reſpect to this laſt Point, which I muſt beg you to remove. The ſecond Conference.

P. Well, *Matho!* What do you think of Attraction now?

M. I can hardly expreſs my Admiration of it: Without Attraction no Body could be

The ſecond Conference.

weighty, or have any Degree of Firmneſs and Solidity, nay, nor be fit, I think, for any one Purpoſe in Nature.

P. What do you think of Matter itſelf?

M. I have already told you, if it were not for this Attraction I do not know what it would be good for.

P. But when endued with the Principle of Attraction, what are your Thoughts of it?

M. It then becomes a *ſolid Subſtance*; it gives way, or quits its Place, if impelled by a ſufficient Force, and drives other Matter out of its Place, when that happens to lie in its Way.

P. By what *Power* does one Body thus drive another out of its Place?

M. By its *Solidity* I ſuppoſe, and not by any Power; ſince it is neceſſary that it ſhould be moved itſelf, before it can impel any other Body.

P. Could not *Body* change Place of itſelf?

M. If, as you affirm, it could not ſo much as *fall downward* without ſome *external Cauſe* (of the Truth of which I am already almoſt perſuaded) I do not think that Body, or Matter, of itſelf could at all change its Place: For *falling downward* ſeemed to me, of all other, the moſt natural Action of Body. But concerning this external Cauſe I have beat my Brains long and fruitleſsly to find out what it may be.

P. It pleaſes me, *Matho*, to ſee you thus ſolicitous to find out the Cauſes of Things; and I dare

I dare engage for it you have not beat your Brains in vain. But here I muſt acquaint you that this Want of Power in Matter is called its *inertia* by the Philoſophers.

M. The Appellation ſeems proper and expreſſive; for according to my Notions Matter, conſidered in itſelf, is as *inert* and *ſluggiſh* a Thing as can well be imagined.

P. Have you any Notion what Matter would be, if this Power of Attraction were not conſtantly exerciſed upon it?

M. Let me think a little, —— I do not know what other People may have, but I am ſure I have no diſtinct Notion of it.

P. It is no wonder, *Matho*; no Man ever had, nor ever will have a diſtinct Notion of it, only ſo far as it is thus acted upon by an immaterial Cauſe: But poſſibly you may come to know more of this afterward.

M. In the mean Time then, let us, if you pleaſe, come to the ſmall Difficulty that ſtill remains with me concerning the ſpherical Figure of the Earth.

P. Let me hear what it is.

M. What are we to think of thoſe high Mountains, which in many Places riſe above the Surface of the Earth, and ſeem not well to agree with its ſpherical Figure?

P. Do you call whole Mountains, with all their Rocks and Precipices, only a ſmall Difficulty?

M. You, who are to remove it, may give it what Name you pleaſe.

The ſecond Conference.

P. Right.——Tell me then, have you ever obſerved the Surface of the Sea?

M. Very often.

P. It doth not riſe above the Level of the Shores?

M. It doth not certainly; otherwiſe the Sea would overflow the dry Land.

P. Doth it ſink far below the Land?

M. Not a great Way; for though in ſome Places the Coaſt riſes pretty high, yet in going on a few Miles you come to a ſmooth and eaſy Beach again.

P. Beſides, *Matho*, the Mouths of all Rivers are on the ſame Level with the Sea into which they empty themſelves: Whence we ſee the *Tide* flows up for a conſiderable Way within the Land in moſt of them.

M. It is ſo indeed.

P. The Shores then, if you except theſe ſmall *Riſings* and *Inequalities*, follow always the Figure of the Sea which they bound.

M. I own they do.

P. But what Figure do you think the *terraqueous Globe* would have, if it were all Water; the Particles of that Element being endued, as they are, with the Power of mutual Attraction, which we ſpoke of before?

M. Give me Time to conſider what Effect Attraction would have in this Caſe?

XIV. *P.* As ſuch a huge Maſs of Water may perhaps perplex your Thoughts, take at firſt only one ſingle Drop; you will manage that

that more eaſily in your Imagination: And whatever agrees to it will agree to any Quantity of Water, how large ſoever.

M. A Drop of Water juſt ready to fall is, as I have often obſerved, almoſt ſpherical.

P. However, let us imagine that the Figure of this Drop may be at firſt ſomewhat long, of the Shape of an Egg; and then are there not more Particles of Water in the Length than in the Breadth of the Drop?

M. Certainly.

P. Is there not therefore a ſtronger Attraction according to the Length of it, than in the Breadth?

M. Without Doubt, becauſe there are more Particles that attract that Way.

P. Muſt not the Water, being fluid, yield to the ſtronger Attraction, and ſo the Drop become ſhorter?

M. This is ſtill plain.

P. Could the Drop therefore remain in any ſettled Figure, unleſs all the Sides of it were equally attracted?

M. It could not.

P. That is, unleſs all the Particles were at an equal Diſtance from the Center of the Drop, and ſo it became ſpherical?

M. In one Drop the Reaſon is plain: We cannot imagine that it could have any *Corners* or *Angles*, or what could keep the Particles at a greater Diſtance in *theſe*, than in other Parts.

P. But is not the ſame Reaſon concluſive, to whatever Bulk we imagine the Drop to grow?

The ſecond Conference.

M. I cannot admit that ſo eaſily; for we obſerve they are but ſmall Drops which thus become round.

P. What is the Reaſon we do not ſee any Quantity of Water ſettle in a ſpherical Figure?

M. I ſuppoſe the Attraction is not ſtrong enough to bring all the Parts into ſuch a Figure.

P. That is not the Thing, *Matho*; but in larger Quantities their Weight toward the Earth ſoon diſturbs and overcomes the Attraction between their Particles, which hinders a globular Figure to take place in them.

M. I perceive it muſt be ſo; or the Attraction of Gravitation is ſtronger than the Attraction of Coheſion in this Caſe.

P. Imagine then in your Mind the Earth to be quite removed, and that there is but one Drop of Water in its Place: You will allow this Drop muſt be round?

M. I have allowed that already.

P. Suppoſe then it grows ſtill larger and larger to any Bulk you can conceive; being no where attracted from without, and having only this Attraction between its own Parts from within; what Figure do you think the whole Maſs would put on? Remember *Gravity in this Caſe diſappears*, or as you yourſelf ſaid, *tends only to the Center of the whole Maſs.*

M. You have diſcovered to me the Miſtake I laboured under. I ſee in theſe Circumſtances, let the Drop grow as big as the whole Earth, or as twenty Earths put together, the Reaſons you

you have given for the Roundneſs of one Drop will be applicable to the whole Bulk. Having no Tendency to any Side from without, and the Parts endeavouring to approach as near to the Center as poſſible from within, a fluid Maſs will always ſettle in a ſpherical Figure.

P. For if it had any *Corners* or *Angles*, any *Protuberances* or *Heights*, what could keep the Water in theſe Parts at a greater Diſtance than in others?

M. Go on, *Philon*; I own there could be no Promontories or Mountains in ſuch a Bulk of Water, more than Corners or Angles in a ſingle Drop.

P. From this mutual Attraction of Parts therefore, what Figure do you ſuppoſe this terraqueous Bulk would put on, if it were all Water?

M. A ſpherical Figure without all Doubt. ——But pray let me interrupt you to aſk why the *Soap-Bubbles*, which Boys have ſuch a Pleaſure in blowing up, that they may behold the ſtrange Variety of fine Colours in them, are all of this ſpherical Figure, whether they be great or ſmall?

P. Theſe Bubbles, *Matho*, are not the Diverſion of Boys only, but alſo of Philoſophers; and this their ſpherical Figure is owing to a different Cauſe.

M. To what different Cauſe?

P. It is owing to the *mutual Repulſe* between the *Particles of Air*: For this contrary Affection ſerves great Purpoſes in Nature, and proceeds

The ſecond Conference.

ceeds from the Power of *the ſame immaterial Cauſe*.

M. Tell me but one of *theſe Purpoſes* which a mutual Repulſe of Parts ſerves for, that I may think of it by my ſelf.

P. Could you breathe, do you think, ſuch a cloſe and thick Subſtance as Water?

M. If that were poſſible, no Body would ever be drowned.

P. But if the Particles of Air, inſtead of repelling, attracted each other, they would make a Subſtance as denſe as Water.

M. How do you know that?

P. Becauſe Water, when exhaled by the Heat of the Sun, or otherwiſe, dilates itſelf into a fluid as light and thin as Air.

M. It is ſo indeed; for I ſee the Steams and Vapours riſe up in all ſuch Caſes——Well! It ſeems we owe our Lives, not only to the Attraction, but to the mutual Repulſe between the Particles of Matter! This is ſurprizing!——Pray tell me now *what Cauſe* it is that produces theſe wonderful Effects?

P. Suſpend a little, I beſeech you, your Enquiry into the *Cauſe*, till you are better acquainted with the Effects: That is the beſt Way to become rightly acquainted with the Nature of the *Cauſe*.

M. Be it ſo: I am certain your Advice muſt be good, therefore I ſhall endeavour to maſter my Impatience.

P. To return; you are ſatisfied that a Maſs of Water as large as the Earth could ſettle in no other than a ſpherical Figure? *M.* I

M. I am; for the Parts of a Fluid muſt eaſily yield to the Force of Attraction, and not reſt till the Attraction can bring them no nearer each other. The ſecond Conference.

XV. *P.* Now if the Sea can only ſettle in a ſpherical Figure, and if the Earth follows the Figure of the Sea, what are we to conclude from thence? ——

M. There is ſomething here that ſeems to ſtick with me ſtill. If indeed the whole Maſs were Water, the Point would admit of no Diſpute: But the Earth may be of a very irregular Figure, and covered by the Sea only to a ſmall Depth; in which Caſe the Sea ſhould rather ſeem to follow the Figure of the Earth.

P. Think better on the Point, *Matho:* The Inequality of the Bottom doth not at all affect the Surface of any Liquid, or make that uneven or irregular, which you may be ſatisfied of from the moſt common Inſtances. The Bottom of a Pool may be rugged and uneven, but the Water on the Top is always ſmooth.

M. Pardon my Inattention; I did not reflect that the Reaſon is the ſame in large as in ſmall Quantities of any Fluid: But now I perceive, if the Sea were ſo deep as to cover the Tops of the higheſt Hills, the Heights under Water could make no *Swellings* on the Surface; and then this univerſal Ocean would be truly ſpherical.

P. For you remember *there could be no Promontories or Mountains of Water.*

M. If I do not, I find you do; But I deſerve to be thus twitted.

P. If

The ſecond Conference.

P. If then the Sea quite ſurrounds the whole Earth, which our Navigation in this Age leaves no Room to doubt of, (though perhaps the Coaſts and Shores may not go on in a ſtrait Line, but wind out and in irregularly enough,) the whole Surface of this continued Ocean cannot be other than ſpherical; and therefore the whole terraqueous Maſs muſt be of a ſpherical Figure, ſince the higheſt Parts of the dry Land are raiſed above the Surface of the Sea, but to a ſmall Height, if compared with the vaſt Bulk of the whole Earth.

M. I perceive at laſt the ſeveral Parts of your Argument meeting together, and concluding the Thing to the Sight of the Eyes.

P. If we ſhould ſuppoſe the Sea only four or five Miles higher than it is, it would cover the Tops of the higheſt Hills (as you were ſaying:) And if we imagine it to ſink down again to the preſent Limits, we ſhould indeed ſee, as it were with our Eyes, the preſent Figure of the whole terraqueous Globe to be next to ſpherical: For four or five Miles are but a ſmall Matter in reſpect of ſeveral Thouſands.

M. And from this ——

P. Go on.

M. From hence I think it will follow that the Surface of any Pool, or ſtagnant Water is a Portion of the ſpherical Surface of the Ocean.

P. It is perfectly well obſerved, *Matho*; for Water, in what Quantity ſoever, always ſettles on the Surface to the Equality of Attraction, as if there were no ſolid Ground near it: And if there

there were not, it would really become a Part of the ſpherical Surface of the Sea, raiſed to that Height, though to the Sight of the Eye it appears plain. The ſecond Conference.

M. I conceive it fully: Any ſmall Part of the Surface of the Sea, a Mile round for Inſtance, appears to the Sight a level Plain.

XVI. *P.* Now to return to the Subject with which we began, *The Heights and Inequalities of the Hills*, to wit; if the terraqueous Globe were accurately ſpherical, would it have the ſame Advantages it has at preſent?

M. I am at a Loſs to know in what reſpect; make your Queſtion, if you pleaſe, more particular.

P. If the Earth were perfectly ſpherical, how could the Water of the Ocean diſpoſe itſelf?

M. O! I have it. The Water of the Sea would then cover the whole Face of the Earth to ſome Height or other; or it would then be equally ſpread over the Surface of ſuch an accurately ſpherical Globe: And there being no dry Land, our Globe could only be in that Caſe a Habitation for *Fiſhes* and *Sea-Monſters*, I perceive unſpeakable Advantages on the Side of the preſent Figure of the Earth.

P. But if the Surface of the Sea were ſunk a Mile or two below the Land, and the reſt of the Globe of a perfect ſpherical Figure, only thus much higher, would that Diſpoſition of Things have any Convenience or Inconvenience above the preſent?

M. From

The ſecond Conference.

M. From the former Caſe I foreſee what would happen in this. If there were any Water at all on this higher Part of the Globe, it muſt cover it all equally: If there were none, the dry Part of the Earth muſt then be *dry* indeed, without Rivers or running Waters, to the great Inconvenience of *Man* and *Beaſt*.

P. It is ſo; for that the Earth may be fruitful, and produce Herb for the Uſe of Man and Beaſt, it muſt abound with Springs and running Waters: Nor could there have been a *Deſcent* for *Rills*, *Brooks*, and *Rivers*, unleſs from ſuch Heights and Inequalities as we ſee at preſent; which, being ſo moderate, neither deform (nor hinder the Deſign of) the ſpherical Figure of the Earth, and yet make the dry Land a comfortable Habitation for Man, and all Creatures that have the Breath of Life.

M. I ſee now the ſurprizing *Art* and *Contrivance* of Nature! the Uſe and Beauty of thoſe Inequalities, which before I looked upon only as a *mere Negligence*!

P. And hence it is that Mountains are ſupported with firm and unyielding Rocks, as it were with Bones, that they may ſtill preſerve their *Heights*, which are ſo neceſſary. *Soft* and *yielding* Mountains of *Clay*, or *pure Mold*, muſt, by ſinking down, have in time filled all Places with dead Waters, or ſtinking Puddles.

M. How raſh *are thoſe Men*, who fancy that the Mountains are only *Blemiſhes* of Nature, and good for nothing!

P. The Man who criticiſes on the Works of Nature, *Matho*, challenges pretty plainly to himſelf a Superiority of Knowledge over the *Author* of *Nature*: A Folly which a ſober Perſon will hardly be guilty of. Mountains to the Eye may ſeem rough and diſagreeable; but whoſoever will reflect on their internal Structure muſt own it is a Piece of Work deſigned by Art, no leſs than the Body of an Animal. For the internal Parts muſt be *firm* and yet *open*, or at leaſt not cloſe and denſe Matter, that they may admit into their Cavities the Rains and Water falling from the Sky: Nor muſt the *Cæleſtial Store* ſtagnate there, but perform a various and mazy Courſe, till it breaks out again into the open Air, at the Sides and Roots of the Hills: Whence it flows in winding Streams to enliven the parched Soil, and chear the thirſty Tribes of Animals.

M. Methinks I ſee all this various Contrivance wrought in the dark Bowels of the Mountains.

P. In this Caſe, *Matho*, we ſeem not to have a Taſte for *great Beauties*, but for little affected Niceties. It is as abſurd to expect that the Mountains wrought by Nature's Hand ſhould have the ſmooth, pitiful Figure of a *Garden-Mount*, as to fancy that a Ship's Anchor muſt be wrought with the Finery of a Trinket in a Toy-Shop.

M. You have certainly, *Philon*, given me a juſt Taſte of the beautiful Variety of *Plains*, *Hills*, and *Vallies*; of which I remember the *Poet* ſays, *Juſſit*

The ſecond Conference.

Juſſit et extendi campos, ſubſidere valles,
Fronde tegi ſylvas, lapidoſos ſurgere montes.

It is Ignorance or Inattention only which make Men imagine, that the Earth would be either more beautiful, or more convenient, if there were no Hills.

P. The Views of Men are too narrow, *Matho*, when they would paſs a Judgment on the great Works of Nature. For the Weight of the large Tracts of Mountains in the ſeveral Parts of the Earth muſt exactly balance one another, for a Reaſon which poſſibly you may diſcover afterwards: And their Height and Bigneſs muſt anſwer to the ſpacious Plains they are to water below.

XVII. *M.* Since now I preſume I am pretty well ſatisfied about the Figure of the Earth; pray what are we to think concerning the Figures of the other remarkable Bodies of the Univerſe: The Sun, Moon, and Stars, I mean?

P. What do you imagine of their Figure from the Appearance they make to the Eye?

M. If I conſider their Appearance, the Sun and Moon ſeem rather to be *flat* and *circular*, than *ſolidly globular*.

P. If you were to ſee a Wooden Globe ſuſpended at a conſiderable Diſtance, how would it appear; flat and plain, or convex and ſpherical?

M. If

M. If it be too far removed, the Convexity of it diſappears, and it ſeems only plain and circular, like a Trencher.

P. It is ſo; the Greatneſs of the Diſtance makes the Convexity imperceptible, and a ſpherical Body appears only like a plain circular Surface. Now ſince a ſpherical Body makes this Appearance at a great Diſtance, what Figure would the Earth appear of to a Spectator removed from it to the Diſtance of the Moon or Sun?

M. For the ſame Reaſon it muſt appear plain and circular.

P. It certainly muſt; for the Shadow of it, when *that* falls upon the Moon, is always circular; and the Earth itſelf could have no other Appearance at that Diſtance than of a flat circular Body.

M. Explain a little, if you pleaſe, how the Shadow of the Earth falls upon the Moon; becauſe, if left to myſelf I ſhall fall into ſome wrong Notion about it.

P. There is no Myſtery in that Affair at all, if this were the proper Place to ſpeak of it: However, I ſhall tell you thus much by the Way: The Earth caſts always a Shadow on that Side which is turned from the Sun, juſt as a Ball does upon the oppoſite Wall, if a Candle ſhines on the other Side of it.

M. So far I underſtand; for it is this Shadow caſt by the Earth, when the Sun is on the oppoſite Side, that makes it Night; when the

The ſecond Conference.

Stars appear, and the Moon ſhines with all her Splendor.

P. You will likewiſe obſerve, if we come to ſpeak of the Syſtem of the Planets, that the Moon, when *full*, is directly on the oppoſite Side of the Earth to the Sun.

M. I have indeed obſerved it ſo: For the *new Moon* is never far from the Sun, but always removes to a greater Diſtance from him, as ſhe draws nearer the *full*.

P. It happens ſometimes then, that ſhe muſt enter into, and paſs through the Shadow of the Earth, when ſhe is ſaid to be *eclipſed*.

M. I have heard of the Moon's being eclipſed, and ſeem now to underſtand the Cauſe of it.

P. In the *Eclipſe*, as the Moon enters into the Shadow of the Earth, it looks as if a black Circle were coming over her: For her Surface appearing plain, the Part of her obſcured is always circular.

M. This is not difficult to be conceived: I could repreſent the Moon by a Circle of white Paper, and the *Shadow* by a large Circle of black Paper gradually intercepting the View of it.

P. You might: And from this Appearance we may again conclude with Certainty that the Figure of the Earth is ſpherical.

M. Pray ſhew me how you draw that Concluſion?

P. You will ſee it thus. Since the Shadow of the Earth, which the Moon paſſes through, falls ſometimes from one Side of the Earth,

and

and ſometimes from another, and yet ſtill appears circular on the Moon's Surface, either as ſhe enters into it, or comes out of it; it is plain the Body which caſts this Shadow muſt be ſpherical. For if in any Poſition of a Body, the Shadow it caſts upon an oppoſite plain Surface, be ſtill circular, that Body muſt be *every Way round*, or ſpherical. The ſecond Conference.

M. This I eaſily conceive from having often diverted myſelf with the Shadows of Things on the Wall: For if the Shadow of a Ball and of a flat circular Body, like a Piece of Money, fall upon a plain Part, the Shadow of the Ball is always round; but if you turn the *Edge* of the circular Body to the Light, the Shadow becomes a ſtraight Line. But how does the Shadow of the Earth fall ſometimes from one Side of it, and ſometimes from another?

P. You may remember you ſaid before, that it is twelve a Clock to ſome Part or other of the Earth, all the four and twenty Hours round.

M. I did; and that when it is Mid-Day to us, the Sun is but riſing to ſome that are Weſt of us, and already ſetting to others that are Eaſt of us.

P. The Sun therefore is always riſing and always ſetting to different Parts of the Earth all the twenty four Hours round?

M. It is ſo.

P. The enlightened half of the Earth then, always veering about weſtward, the Shadow muſt be caſt by different Parts of the Earth's

The ſecond Conference.

Surface. You find it is ſo in the Example you mentioned juſt now; for whether you turn the Ball round before the Candle, or carry the Candle round the Ball; different Parts of the Ball will be enlightened, and therefore the Shadow formed by different Parts of its Surface.

M. The Matter appears to me now extremely plain. Only tell me why the Shadow of the Earth doth not eclipſe the Stars as well as the Moon.

P. It ends in a Point, before it can reach any of the other heavenly Bodies.

M. Pray, how is that?

P. You will lead us from our Purpoſe, *Matho*; however, as you have ſometimes diverted yourſelf with projecting Shadows on the Wall, you will eaſily apprehend the Caſe.

M. I am glad of having diverted myſelf ſo, if that will help me to underſtand theſe Things.

P. If the Body, whoſe Shadow is projected, be bigger than the *luminous Body*, the Shadow grows always larger, the farther it goes.

M. That I know; having ſeen my own Shadow of a gigantick Size.

P. If the Sun then were leſs than the Earth, its Shadow would ſtill grow larger, and reach out to an infinite length: But if, on the contrary, the Sun be larger than the Earth, its Shadow muſt grow always leſs, and at laſt end in a Point.

M. So then it ſeems the Sun is larger than our Earth? I am glad to have diſcovered that ſo

ſo eaſily, and ſhall not trouble you farther with my Queſtions on this Head.

XVIII. *P.* To return then to the Figure of the other cœleſtial Bodies; ſuppoſing the Sun and Moon are vaſt ſpherical Bodies, like our Earth, (and you have ſeen already the Sun is bigger) and that they are placed at a great Diſtance from us; what ſort of a Figure, think you, muſt they appear to have, when ſeen from hence?

M. They muſt, by what you have ſhewn me before, appear *flat* and *round*, not *ſpherical*.

P. And ſince they actually appear flat and round, what Figures muſt the Bodies themſelves really have?

M. A ſpherical Figure, I ſuppoſe: And beſides it ſeems ſome way or other unnatural to imagine them *flat* and *thin* Bodies.

P. That Fancy would be whimſical enough: But what you ſay is confirmed from this Conſideration, that ſome of the cœleſtial Bodies (and among theſe the *Sun himſelf*) are conſtantly turning round on their Axis, (as it is called) and ſo ſhew ſucceſſively all their different Sides to us; and ſince in every Poſition they appear round, their Figure cannot be other than ſpherical.

M. That Circumſtance, indeed, puts the Thing out of Doubt: For if the Sun were a flat thin Body, upon turning his edge to us, he would appear (like the circular Body we juſt now ſpoke of) a *long bright Line*; which

The ſecond Conference.

would be an odd ſort of a Figure for the Sun. But leaving the Sun and Moon, of what Figure are the other cœleſtial Bodies?

P. Some of theſe too, I have told you, are diſcovered to turn round on their own Axis, and ſtill appear circular.

M. Theſe therefore are *large Globes*, I ſuppoſe.

P. They certainly are.

M. What is the Reaſon then, that none of them appear ſo large as the Sun and Moon?

P. You know, *Matho, a Houſe at ſix or ſeven Miles diſtance could hardly be ſeen; or at beſt appear very ſmall.*

M. Good: However, I know now that the Sun is larger than a Houſe.

P. But tell me, if the Sun were ſtill removed to a greater Diſtance from us, or (which comes to the ſame Thing) we carried to a greater Diſtance from him; how would he appear from this Change of Diſtance?

M. He would ſtill appear leſs and leſs.

P. And if he were thus removed *without end*, what would follow?

M. He would, in Time, appear only like one of the biggeſt Stars, and afterward like one of the ſmaller: And certainly, if he removed *without end*, we ſhould at laſt loſe Sight of him altogether.

P. It is ſo; ſmall Bodies, by increaſing their Diſtance, ſoon diſappear; and the largeſt muſt do ſo too at laſt.

M. But

M. But I think I have obſerved a Difference in this Caſe, between *ſhining* and *dark* Bodies: *A Candle* is ſeen at a great Diſtance in the Night-time, while a larger Body, though in the ſtrongeſt Sun-ſhine, cannot be ſeen near ſo far by Day. The ſecond Conference.

P. Your Obſervation is extremely juſt: Bodies that are ſeen by their own Light pierce far, while Bodies that are diſcerned only by the Light of another, ſtrike the Eye leſs forcibly. And it is quite inconceivable, at what immenſe Diſtances ſome of the *ſhining Bodies* in the Sky are placed from us. Which Things it may hereafter be of great Uſe to you to remember.

M. When there is Occaſion, I ſhall eaſily call them to Mind.

P. As to the other Part of your Obſervation, it is a very neceſſary Condition of ſeeing a *lucid Body* at the greateſt Diſtance, that no Light ſtrike the Eye but it's own. All the Stars, you ſee, diſappear by Day; and the leſſer are not eaſily ſeen when the Moon ſhines bright. And if there were an intenſe Darkneſs, Stars that now eſcape the quickeſt Eye would be diſcerned.

M. In looking up to the Heavens in a ſtarry Evening, *Philon*, I have often admired with myſelf, the Immenſity of *that Space*, and fatigued my Imagination, to find out if it had any Limits; and what you ſaid juſt now of the Sun's being *removed without End* brings it to my Mind again: Pray could a Body *move on endleſsly?*

The ſecond Conference.

P. Why not? as well as *the Earth be ſtretched out endleſsly in Breadth?*

M. That was only an inconſiſtent Notion of mine: But could a Body move ſtraight forward for ever, without finding any Thing to ſtop it?

P. Nothing could ſtop it, unleſs it were another Body.

M. And could it move on thus to any Side?

P. To any Side, to which you can ſuppoſe it to move at all.

M. This is extremely ſurpriſing! Pray is there nothing in all this *infinite Room* or *Space?*

P. If there be nothing in it, then *nothing* would be infinite, while *ſomething* is but finite.

M. You ſpeak too conciſely; pray direct me how to think in this Caſe.

P. It is too ſoon for you to enter on this Speculation.

M. Remember your own Words, *Philon.* ——*The plain and ſimple Truth is to be laid open to young Perſons, as ſoon as they begin to turn their Thoughts to any Subject.*——

P. You puſh me unaccountably, *Matho!* However, as you have ſtarted that Thought, which naturally leads young Minds to their firſt Notion of Infinite; all that is neceſſary for you to know at this Age is, that ſome *poſitive Thing*, *ſome Being*, muſt be infinite: For that *Emptineſs*, or *Void*, or *pure Nothing*, ſhould be infinite, is both abſurd and impious.

M. But may not *Matter* be infinite?

P. What is Matter abſtracted from the Principle of Attraction we ſpoke of before?

M. I

M. I owned to you then, *I had no diſtinct Notion of it, without that Principle:* All that remains, abſtracting from that, is ſome *ſluggiſh dead Thing.*

P. How would it ſound, to ſay *infinite Deadneſs, infinite Inactivity?*

M. As ill, I think, as *infinite Emptineſs, infinite Nothing.*

P. If then Matter, informed by this Principle, were infinite, that would neceſſarily ſuggeſt to us *a prior*, and *nobler Infinite* than Matter; ſince you have already perceived, from ſome good Reaſons, that Attraction is the Power of an *immaterial Cauſe.* And though any Man could have a Notion of Matter without *that Principle*, whereby it can only become a ſolid Subſtance, *ſuch a Thing* infinite could only be *infinite Inactivity, infinite Want of Power.* But for other Reaſons Matter cannot be infinite. And at any Rate to ſuppoſe it ſuch, is either ſuppoſing a Contradiction, or allowing a prior and nobler Infinite.

M. I have even ſome Notion of this, ſo far as it depends on what you ſhewed me before; and I'm ſure it is better to have heard it, than to be left to the Uncertainty of my own Thoughts. But ſince ſome *poſitive Being* muſt be infinite, may we not enquire into the Nature of that *nobler*, *prior* Infinite?

P. O! by all Means; let it be the Buſineſs of your Life: But if you have a Notion how abſurd *infinite Deadneſs, infinite Inactivity* is, endeavour to get a Notion of *Infinity of Power*, *Infi-*

The ſecond Conference.

Infinity of Life, Infinity of Knowledge: For what is infinite muſt be infinite in Perfection, *in all Perfection.*

M. I perceive, if I ſhould ſay *infinite Deadneſs*, or *infinite Weakneſs*, that would render *Life* or *Power* impoſſible; becauſe there could be no Room for the *Perfection*, if the *Imperfection* were infinite.

P. Cheriſh this Notion, *Matho*; Infinity itſelf is the greateſt Perfection, and moſt People are not aware of the Abſurdity of joining it to mere Negations. I have now nothing left to add on the Subject.

XIX. *M.* Will you give me Leave then to propoſe a Thought to you concerning the Subject we were upon before?

P. I ſhall liſten to it with great Pleaſure.

M. When I conſider this ſpherical Figure of the cœleſtial Bodies, and how unnatural it is that any of them ſhould have been *thin* and *flat*; and when I reflect on that Attraction which obtains through the whole Bulk of the Earth, which naturally produces a Roundneſs of Figure in any Maſs of Matter; I begin to think that this Property of Attraction is no leſs prevalent in the *Bodies above*, than in our Globe.

P. The Thoughts are very naturally joined together, *Matho*; and no leſs ſolid than ingenious: For do you ſtill remember your own Obſervation?

M. What?

P. That without this Attraction no Body could have

have been weighty, or have had any Degree of Firmneſs and Solidity; nay, nor have been fit for any one Purpoſe in Nature? The ſecond Conference.

M. I do.

P. And you ſtill allow *that this Attraction is not the Work of Matter itſelf?*

M. That I am more and more perſuaded of: For how could a Particle act at a Diſtance? Nothing can act but where it is. Or how could it act ten thouſand different Ways at once?

P. Matter could not then be *ſolid Subſtance*, or adhere one Particle of it to another, without Attraction?

M. It could not.

P. We muſt allow Attraction therefore in *thoſe Bodies*, as they are ſolid Subſtance, abſtracting from their Figure?

M. I ſee it plainly; we muſt. And not only there, but every where elſe. This Conſideration makes the Attraction of Coheſion univerſal.

P. And then as to Gravitation; the Particles of Matter in thoſe Bodies could not have fallen into this ſpherical Figure of themſelves; ſince *Motion*, *Change of Place*, and *falling downward* (that is towards a Center) all proceed from this Attraction.

M. All this is ſtill freſh in my Mind, and I diſcover now the Truth of that which I thought at firſt was only a probable Conjecture. Without Attraction the Particles could never have come into this ſpherical Figure; unleſs we ſhould ſuppoſe that ſome *unknown Being* had at firſt laid them all in this round Form.

P. That

The ſecond Conference.

P. That muſt have been a painful and tedious Taſk, *Matho*; but even this extravagant Suppoſition is inſufficient, ſince the leaſt Force might have diſordered them again: For Attraction is as neceſſary to preſerve a ſpherical Figure, as to form it at firſt.

M. I have ſome Conception of what you ſay; but explain it to me a little, if you pleaſe.

P. *Body* could not have Weight if it were not attracted.

M. Surely not, ſince Weight is only the Force of this Attraction acting conſtantly.

P. Water could not tend to the lower Ground if it had no Weight, nor change the Figure it ſhould at any Time be put into.

M. That is undeniable.

P. You might build Water then, or rather lay it in the Form of a *Wall*, a *Houſe*, a *Pyramid*, any Thing you pleaſe to imagine; it could not move from the Place in which you laid it.

M. The Thought is ſurprizing; and yet there is no denying the Conſequence! I ſee Water could not be Water without this Attraction: I could mould it into any Figure: Nay, I could lay a Quantity of it as high as I could reach over my Head, and it would remain there. This is all Wonder! What ſhould we drink! I thought Water had been neceſſarily Water.

P. All the Water in the Sea therefore, or all the Matter in the Earth, might be laid in the Form of a flat thin Body, or diſpoſed of in a huge Length, or in many other Ways

we

we might conceive; and it could never more return to a ſperical Figure again.

M. You ſatisfy me abundantly, O *Philon!* that Attraction is as neceſſary to preſerve a ſpherical Figure in the great Bodies of the Univerſe, as to bring them into it at firſt. I am overjoyed to find this Attraction as univerſal as it is wonderful. It is ſalutary to us ſo many Ways; and a Kind of Preſervative, I think, to the whole Frame of Nature.

P. You will I hope have greater Reaſon to ſay ſo hereafter.

XX. *M.* Now ſince the Earth is bounded every Way, and of a ſpherical Figure, is it known how large the Globe of the Earth is?

P. This is known pretty exactly; but if you would be informed of any Thing about it's Magnitude, you muſt firſt underſtand the Names and Poſitions of ſome Circles, that are imagined to be on it's Surface, and are painted on this artificial Globe; becauſe it is by the Help of theſe they have meaſured the Earth.

M. Pray make me acquainted with them. I have often admired theſe Lines, without knowing any thing of their Uſe.

P. Theſe two Points are called the *Poles* of the Earth; this here raiſed above the wooden Frame is called the *Arctick*, or *North Pole*; it points to the Pole of the Heaven ſeen by us. The other ſunk below is called the *Antarctick*, or *South Pole*; it points to the oppoſite Part of the Heavens, which we in this Part of the Earth never ſee.

M. You

The ſecond Conference.

M. You named theſe Poles before, I remember, and ſpoke of the *Pole Star*: But why are they called *Poles?*

P. Becauſe they are as it were the *Hinges* on which the Earth, according to ſome, or the Heavens, according to others, turn round in twenty four Hours.

M. This *Engliſh* Name ſuggeſts to me their Uſe, becauſe any Thing may be turn'd on it's Hinges.

P. You will obſerve then that the Poles themſelves do not turn round.

M. So I perceive by turning round the Globe.

P. The Line which joins the two Poles is called the *Axis* of the Earth.

M. I know very well what an Axis means, and what the Uſe of it is.

P. This Circle equally diſtant from both Poles is called the *Æquator*.

M. The Reaſon of it's Name is obvious.

P. All theſe Circles which you ſee cut the Æquator, and meet at the Poles, are called *Meridians*.

M. Why are they called Meridians?

P. The Word you know ſignifies ſomething belonging to the *Mid-Day*. Now when the Sun comes to *our Meridian*, for Inſtance, he makes it Mid-Day, or Noon, to us; being equally diſtant from Eaſt and Weſt.

M. I conceive it; and when he goes farther Weſt he makes it twelve a Clock to another Place, and ſo on quite round: And ſince, as we have ſaid before, it muſt be twelve a Clock

Clock to all Places round the Globe in four and twenty Hours, there are many Meridians; for every Place muſt have it's own Meridian, which has twelve a Clock at a different Time. The ſecond Conference

P. This Readineſs of yours, *Matho*, ſaves me a great many Words, which I ſhould be forced to uſe with ſome of your Age.—— We may conſider the other Circles on the Globe hereafter, if there be Occaſion: But you muſt know that every Circle is divided into three hundred and ſixty equal Parts, which are called *Degrees*.

M. I obſerve indeed the Æquator on this larger Globe ſo divided, as alſo the great brazen Circle divided into 4 Nineties.

P. You muſt likewiſe know that the Point of the Heavens juſt over the Pole of the Earth doth not ſeem to move.

M. Becauſe, I ſuppoſe, the whole Heavens ſeem to turn round on that Point.

P. And therefore they ſeem to turn round the *Pole-Star*, though a little diſtant from it. And this you may eaſily obſerve yourſelf in the Heavens any Evening: For you will ſee all the Stars change Place with reſpect to you, except the *Pole-Star*, which ſtill keeps at the ſame Height above you.

M. I have obſerved the reſt to move weſtward; but know not the Pole-Star, which I beg you would ſhew me ſome Evening.

P. I will whenever you pleaſe. Laſtly, you may obſerve almoſt the ſame Circles on this other Globe, which is called the *Cæleſtial*: For

The ſecond Conference.

For they ſuppoſe the *Convex* Surface of the Earth, and the *Concave* Surface of the Heaven to be divided nearly the ſame Way.

XXI. Now, *Matho*, if any Perſon ſhould go round the Earth on one of theſe Meridians; that is, if he ſhould go over the whole three hundred and ſixty Degrees of this Circle, muſt he not diſcover the whole Concavity of the Heaven *by Degrees?*

M. He muſt, by going round the whole Earth from *South* to *North*.

P. That is, would he not diſcover all the 360 Degrees of the *cæleſtial Meridian*, which is over the *terreſtrial*, one Degree after another?

M. He certainly would. This is eaſily conceived from what you ſaid before, when you ſhewed me that the Earth was ſpherical from South to North, as well as from Eaſt to Weſt: For if a Man ſhould go one Degree forward to the North on the terreſtrial Meridian, one Degree of the cœleſtial Meridian muſt ſeem to riſe above the Earth before his Eyes; and a Degree of it likewiſe muſt ſeem to fall below the Earth behind him; and ſo on; a new Degree would ſeem to riſe before, and another to ſet behind him, through all the three hundred and ſixty Degrees. This is the ſame Caſe with the *Ant* and the *wooden Bowl*.

P. You make the Application juſtly enough. But from the different Elevation of the *Pole*, or of ſome other Star, Mathematicians know very

very well when they have gone over a Degree of the terreſtrial Meridian, or one three hundred and ſixtieth Part of the whole Circuit of the Earth. And different Perſons have carefully meaſured, both here in *England* and in *France*, how much this three hundred and ſixtieth Part of the Earth's Circuit comes to, their ſeveral Calculations agreeing to a very Trifle. Thus, the Figure of it being ſpherical, they have diſcovered how much the whole Circuit of it is, and given in common Meaſure the greateſt Thickneſs of it, or the Length of a Line from the one Side to the other, which is called the *Diameter* of the Earth. The ſecond Conference.

M. Pray how long may this Diameter be?

P. It is little leſs than eight thouſand Miles.

M. So far, therefore, are we diſtant from the Antipodes.

P. We are.

M. This is a prodigious Maſs to be ſuſpended in the *empty Æther!*

P. Does it yet ſeem wonderful to you, that the Earth ſhould be ſuſpended in the empty Æther?

M. No; you have corrected my Notions concerning that; but I fall inadvertently into the common Ways of ſpeaking. The mutual Attraction of the Parts makes the whole Weight of the Globe tend inwardly to its own Center: So that it is of no Conſequence, whether the Body be ſmall or great, provided this Attraction be directed to nothing from without.

The ſecond Conference.

P. To be ſuſpended therefore is an improper Expreſſion, and ſerves only to miſlead our Thoughts, as if *Body* tended naturally, and of itſelf, to one Side more than to another. It is more juſt to ſay, *Bodies are placed* in the ambient Space, than that they are *ſuſpended* in it.

M. You told me before, I remember, *That toward the Earth was downward, and toward the Heaven upward, on whatever Part of this Globe we ſtand.*

P. I did.

M. And that *the Center of the Earth was the loweſt Point of all, with reſpect to us.*

P. It is ſo.

M. I perceive from what we have ſaid juſt now then, that it muſt be ſo on any other great Body of the Univerſe. Towards its Center is always *downward*, and its Center muſt be the *loweſt Point*, with reſpect to the Weight of any Body placed on it.

P. There is all the Parity of Reaſon for this, there can be for any Thing.

M. This diſcovers to me the Foundation of my firſt Prejudice: For I thought there was an *univerſal downward* (if I may ſay ſo) with reſpect to the whole Infinity of Space, and an *univerſal upward*, that were unchangeable: Or that all Bodies naturally tended one Way. Whereas I now find that *downward* and *upward* change, both with reſpect to the oppoſite Sides of the ſame great Body, and with reſpect to the different great Bodies of the Univerſe.

P. You

P. You are right. *Downward* is only a relative Term with reſpect to the Center of any of thoſe great Bodies: For when a Ship ſails round the Earth, it would be ridiculous to think that your *univerſal downward* turned upward, that is, the contrary Way, when ſhe came to the oppoſite Side of the Globe; or that *downward* and *upward* rolled round the whole Earth, and the whole Heavens too, as the Ship advanced on in her Courſe.

M. That would be a monſtrous Fancy indeed.

P. That you may perceive the Abſurdity of it more clearly, let us, if you pleaſe, ſuppoſe, that there was a Time when there was no Body at all in the infinite Space; and then try if you can imagine a *downward* or an *upward* in theſe Circumſtances.

M. I find I cannot.——*down*,—— towards what? Or *up*,——towards what? No; *down* and *up* are vaniſhed now.

P. Down and *up* are not abſolute then?

M. Moſt certainly they are not.

P. Suppoſe again that only *one Body* exiſted in Nature, as the Earth, or the Sun; will *upward* and *downward* begin to appear in that Caſe?

M. Not an *univerſal downward* and *upward* more than before: There will only be a *downward* with reſpect to the Center of this Body, and *upward* from it.

P. Imagine there were two ſuch Bodies in the immenſe Space: Will theſe give Riſe to *abſolute downward* and *upward*?

 M. No,

The ſecond Conference.

M. No, though we ſhould ſuppoſe ever ſo many. *Theſe* are nothing in themſelves, only mere external Denominations.

P. It is ſo; they are nothing real; and it is ſtrange that the Generality of Men ſhould give them a Reality in their own Notions. If they were *real*, they would occupy or belong to the whole Immenſity of Space, and be antecedent to the Exiſtence of Matter. Hence then tell me, Do Bodies tend naturally and of themſelves to any one Side more than another?

M. They do not: Here was the Prejudice I laboured under, I now ſee to the Bottom of it.

P. Can *Gravity* therefore, or *Weight*, or *tending to any Place*, or *Motion of any Kind*, belong to the Nature of Body or Matter?

M. I perceive, dear *Philon*, from this familiar and convincing Argument they cannot; and that all theſe *(Motion, Weight, Tendency)* are the immediate Impreſſions of that IMMATERIAL CAUSE, with which you have not yet been pleaſed to acquaint me. But it gives me great Satisfaction to have come at this different View of ſuch an agreeable Truth. And if this remains a general Prejudice even among Men, how eaſy were it to throw the childiſh Notion of an *abſolute downward* and *upward* out of their Minds? It likewiſe gives me Pleaſure to think how acceptable the Diſcovery of this Truth will be to my Companions. For I will endeavour to communicate all theſe Things to them, and try to deal with their Prejudices as you have done with mine.

P. Your

P. Your Deſign proceeds from a right Diſpoſition, *Matho*: There is not a more generous and rational Pleaſure than that of communicating Knowledge and Truth to another rational Being: Nor can any Method be more effectual to rivet theſe Things *deep in* your own Mind, than by caſting about to find out the beſt Way to make others conceive them.——— The ſecond Conference.

M. As to the Method of meaſuring the Earth, I have a Notion of it in general: The hardeſt Things muſt have a Beginning, and become familiar by Degrees: Pray go on therefore as you begun, to tell me Things as they really are: Though they may be above my Reach, ſomething will ſtill ſtick with me. Wherefore,

XXII. Pray inform me how far the Moon is diſtant from us?

P. Have you any Thoughts of making a Trip thither?

M. I wiſh the Thing were practicable.

P. The Length of the Journey, I am afraid, would diſcourage you.

M. How far may it be?

P. After we know the Length of the Earth's Semidiameter, and the Angle which that ſubtends at the Moon, by two Lines drawn from its Extremities to her Center, it appears that her Diſtance from us is about 60 of theſe Semidiameters, or nearly 240000 Miles.

The ſecond Conference.

M. That is indeed a Journey not to be made in the Space of one Night: And in the Day-Time there is ſcarce any finding one's Way, which is ſomewhat ſingular. But how large a Body may the Moon be, if compared with our Earth?

P. The Diameter of the Earth is near four Times longer than the Diameter of the Moon; which, (among other Methods) is known from the Breadth of the Earth's Shadow, where the Moon paſſes through it.

M. That is to ſay, three or four Moons might be contained in it at one another's Sides.

P. You are right. Whence the Face of our Earth would appear about fifteen times bigger to a Spectator at the Moon, than the Face or *Diſk* of the Moon (as it is called) appears to us here.

M. How can it appear fifteen Times bigger? It ſhould only appear, I think, three or four Times bigger.

P. You will naturally imagine ſo, *Matho*, till you are better ſkilled in theſe Matters. But here is a Figure of the very Thing we are ſpeaking of. This larger Circle, which repreſents the Breadth of the Earth's Shadow where the Moon paſſes through it, contains the leſſer you ſee, which repreſents the Moon more than three Times; yet the *firſt* is much more than three Times the *laſt*.

M. I find I was quite miſtaken; yet I might eaſily have rectified myſelf, by imagining the Figures drawn.

P. This

P. This will ſurprize you more; if a Body like a *Dye* hath its Side twice as long as another of the ſame Sort, it will be equal to eight Times that other: Which may be ſeen by cutting any ſoft Body into ſuch Shapes. The ſecon Conference

M. I have almoſt a Notion how a Piece of Apple, or Turnep, might be ſo cut, as to make eight ſuch ſmall Dice out of a larger one.

P. I preſume you are not altogether a Novice at this Work.

M. Not quite; if this were as helpful as *projecting Shadows on the Wall.*

P. It is at leaſt as helpful. The Imagination is beſt informed from the Eyes: However, as it is neceſſary you ſhould underſtand how this is in general; if you will come here at any of your leiſure Hours, we will amuſe ourſelves a little with *drawing* and *cutting* Figures. The Thing will eaſily become plain that Way, as well as by Numbers.

M. I will not fail.——But pray do me the Favour to inform me next, how far the Sun may be diſtant from us?

P. I have told you juſt now, *Matho*, that we find the Diſtance of the Moon, by the Help of the Semidiameter of the Earth, the Length of which we know: But the Diſtance of the Sun is ſo vaſtly great, that the Earth's Semidiameter hardly bears any Proportion to it. For thoſe, who tell us there is a certain Proportion between them, are far from being agreed what it is. Some ſay the Earth's Semidiameter is about the 15000th Part of the Sun's

The ſecond Conference.

Diſtance; others, that it is only a 20000th Part of it: But others affirm that it is conſiderably leſs than the 300000th Part of it.

M. This indeed is equal to ſaying nothing.

P. According to this laſt Opinion, the Diſtance of the Moon from the Earth is not the 500th Part of the Sun's Diſtance from it.

M. Strange! How prodigious muſt the Sun's Velocity be then!

P. What Velocity?

M. That whereby he makes a Revolution round the Earth in twenty four Hours. The Moon, though ſo much nearer us, requires ſtill ſomewhat longer Time.

P. Cynthia, you know, a delicate Virgin, cannot be ſuppoſed to keep up with her brother *Phœbus*.

M. I do not want to hear the *Poets*, but the *Philoſophers*.

P. Or perhaps it is the Law of theſe Motions, that the moſt diſtant Bodies ſhould perform their Revolutions round the Earth in the ſhorteſt Time.

M. It is excuſable in me, *Philon*, to be hitherto ignorant of the Laws of theſe Motions; therefore pray inform me what prodigious Force drives the Sun round the Earth every Day, though removed to ſuch an immenſe Diſtance from it?

P. You might alſo aſk me, *Matho*, what Force (yet more prodigious) drives round all the other cœleſtial Bodies; the Stars which are without Number, and the ſtarry Frame of Heaven

Heaven itſelf. Theſe are placed at a much greater Diſtance than the Sun, and perform their Courſe ſomewhat ſooner: So that, as I ſaid, the moſt diſtant, at this Rate, muſt finiſh their diurnal Revolution in the ſhorteſt Time.

M. That is, indeed, what I ſhould have aſked: The Difficulty, I ſee, is vaſtly increaſed!——Well, this only heightens my Curioſity and Deſire the more: Unravel therefore theſe Wonders, and tell me whence the Mighty Force proceeds, which thus whirls round the whole Frame of Nature in the Space of one Day?

XXIII. *P.* I could eaſily ſhew you ſuch a Trifle as this, if you would explain to me by what Force this Chamber we are in, and even the whole Houſe itſelf, whirls round this little Globe I have in my Hand, with ſuch Rapidity every Moment.

M. Why do you put me off, *Philon*, in this joking Way, which is nothing to the Purpoſe? The Chamber does not wheel round that little Globe, but you twirl the Globe about with your Fingers, while the Room and whole Houſe remain immoveable.

P. If it be ſo here, *Matho*, I am afraid you will find it ſo in the other Caſe: For conſider, this little Spot you ſee here is our Iſland of *Great Britain*; and let the *Window* there repreſent the Sun. Now *Britain* being in this Poſition, or directly oppoſite to the Sun, we have Mid-Day; but as the Iſland moves thus

to

The ſecond Conference.

to the *Eaſt*, the Sun ſeems to decline towards the *Weſt*; and afterwards to ſet beyond the Mountains, as it loſes Sight of him. The Motion thus continuing all Night, when *Britain* hath got through the Shadow of the Earth, and begins to turn about again to *the Rays* of the Sun in the *Eaſt*, he ſeems to be riſing in that Quarter, and gradually to mount up the Sky, as *this Spot* turns toward him; till it is again directly oppoſed to him, and the diurnal Revolution finiſhed.—Now, *Matho*, is what paſſes in the Heavens different from this Repreſentation of the Matter which I have given you?

M. Softly, *Philon!* the two Caſes are quite different, I ſee plainly the Heavens carried from *Eaſt* to *Weſt*, while the Earth ſtands ſtill: But here, on the contrary, the Chamber and Window have no Motion, only you turn this little Sphere in your Hand.

P. Certainly, *Matho*, you do not perceive the Heavens to move more than the Earth; nor the Earth to reſt more than the Heavens: Only after ſome Time you ſee that the Part of the Earth, where you are, hath changed its Situation with reſpect to the heavenly Bodies. Wherefore your *Senſe* doth not ſhew you either the Motion of the Heavens, or the Reſt of the Earth, which you ſtand upon. And did not you yourſelf, at our firſt Meeting, ſay, *You wondered how the Sun moves over ſo large a Space every Day, and yet ſeems not to ſtir out of the Place?*

M. To

The ſecond Conference.

M. To own the Truth, I find now, I do not *ſee* the Motion of the Sun or Heavens, but *infer* from my having changed Situation with reſpect to them, that they move and the Earth ſtands ſtill.

P. If this be all, would it not be as agreeable to Reaſon to infer from this Change of Situation, between the Parts of the Earth and the heavenly Bodies, that the Earth moves, and the Heavens ſtand ſtill?

M. I begin to be ſtaggered.

P. Where the Informations of our Senſes are doubtful, we ought to conſider the Reaſons of Things, and determine according to them, leaving the Informations of Senſe quite out of the Caſe.

M. That is but reaſonable, if once we were certain that the Informations of Senſe were doubtful in this Point.

P. We will therefore examine the Point more narrowly.

XXIV. Wherefore let us ſuppoſe that the Earth *really moves round* on its own Axis from *Weſt* to *Eaſt*, and that in the ſame Time in which the Heavens ſeem to be carried round from *Eaſt* to *Weſt*: And then tell me what Changes would happen from this *real Motion* of the Earth, according to the Information of your Senſe?

M. I cannot indeed be poſitive.

P. Conſider if theſe are the Changes which would happen. The Parts of the Heavens towards

The ſecond Conference.

towards the *Eaſt* would come in Sight one after another, while like Parts on the *Weſt* would go out of Sight in the ſame Manner: Or on the *Eaſt* ſome Parts of the Heavens would always be riſing, and on the *Weſt* others always be ſetting; the middle Parts moving gradually to the ſame Hand. And in four and twenty Hours the whole Heavens would thus ſeem to riſe and ſet. Are not theſe the Appearances we ſhould obſerve on this Supposition?

M. They are ſo in Truth. For I perceive now from what is ſaid before, it is the ſame Thing as if, the Earth ſtanding ſtill, a Man were carried with the like Velocity from *Weſt* to *Eaſt*, who muſt ſee the Heavens and Stars thus to riſe up before, and ſink down behind him, as you ſhewed me when ſpeaking of the Method of meaſuring the Earth. I plainly ſee that the Earth's carrying the Man from *Weſt* to *Eaſt*, or the Man's moving over the (immoveable) Earth, with the ſame Velocity, and to the ſame Hand, could not alter the Appearances of the heavenly Bodies ſeeming to riſe as he advanced to the one Side, and ſet as he retired from the other.

P. You will eaſily perceive, *Matho*, ſince the Motion of the Earth on its Axis muſt be equable and ſmooth, without Succuſſion or Jolts; and ſince we ſee ſuch a large Portion of its Surface round us, the Parts of which are all relatively at Reſt among themſelves, and with reſpect to us, who muſt be carried along with

with them: I ſay you will eaſily perceive from thence, that we could be ſenſible of its Motion no otherwiſe than by obſerving the Horizon (as it is called) where the Earth ſeems contiguous with other Objects; for all the Changes produced by its Motion muſt appear there.

M. I apprehend perfectly what you ſay, and ſee the Truth of it. A blind Man could not be ſenſible of his being carried along in a Coach, or any other Way, unleſs it were by the Succuſſions or Jolting; nor a Man with his Eyes open, unleſs he perceived himſelf to draw nearer to ſome Objects, or leave others farther behind him: Neither of which Circumſtances can be in the Motion of the whole Earth.

P. Moreover, that the Sun or Stars ſeem to riſe higher and higher above us, ought to create no Prejudice in our Minds againſt the Earth's moving, and their ſtanding ſtill; for ſince *over our Heads* is always *upward* to us, they will ſeem to riſe higher in the Heavens as we are turned more toward them.

M. This is eaſily conceived; for while the Sun is higheſt to us at Noon, he ſeems to be mounting up from the *Eaſt* to thoſe that are *Weſt* of us, and low ſunk in the *Weſt* to thoſe who are *Eaſt* of us.——

P. Well, are not the Changes I named thoſe which would appear, if the Earth moved, and the Heavens ſtood ſtill?

M. They are.

P. Are

The ſecond Conference.

P. Are they not the ſame too with the Changes that really appear?

M. They are.

P. Could any one then on this Suppoſition conclude that the Heavens moved?

M. If he did, he would conclude very falſely.

P. But ſince the Changes really happen now, which would happen from the Motion of the Earth, can a Man fairly infer from them that the Earth ſtands ſtill?

M. Since you have ſhewed me ſo convincingly that the Changes, which I ſuppoſed would happen if the Earth ſtood ſtill, are preciſely thoſe that muſt happen if it moves, I am ready to give up the Queſtion.

P. Let us go a ſtep farther if you pleaſe, and ſuppoſe that the Earth moved ſo ſwiftly round its Axis, that our Iſland would return to the Sun (by Suppoſition immoveable) every Quarter of an Hour; in that Caſe what Motions do you think ſhould we perceive?

M. We could then no more perceive the Motion of the Earth than at preſent: But the Sun and Stars would ſeem to roll over our Heads with the Swiftneſs of a Bird flying: And the Stars near the Horizon (where the Motion muſt be chiefly perceived) would appear to run along the Tops of the Hills with ſurprizing Celerity. In which Caſe indeed even our Senſes would ſeem to inform us of the Motion of the heavenly Bodies.

P. But would they inform us truly?

M. Nay,

M. Nay, their Information then muſt be the greateſt Fallacy. The ſecond Conference.

P. Our Senſes inform us, *Matho*, that the Moon moves to the *North* with the ſame Celerity that the Clouds below her fly towards the *South:* They inform us that the *Trees*, *Houſes*, and other Objects on the Shore, draw back from the Ship in which we are, while ſhe goes out of the Harbour.

M. Enough, *Philon*, I give up the Point. I am ſatisfied our Senſes can in no Caſe prove to us the Motion of the Heavens; and that we are to be determined by Reaſon, and not the dubious Appearances from Senſe.

XXV. But what Reaſon can be given why the Earth ſhould move rather than the Heavens?

P. The Earth perhaps is rooted in ſome immoveable Baſis.

M. I do not pretend that hinders it.

P. And what Reaſon then, *Matho*, *can not* be given, why *one ſingle Body*, and that one of the ſmalleſt, ſhould not revolve on its own Axis in the Space of twenty four Hours, rather than that all the World, infinitely larger in Bulk, ſhould be carried round in the ſame Time with inconceivable Rapidity, as being placed at an immenſe Diſtance from it: And all this to no other Purpoſe than to bring about the *Viciſſitude of Light and Darkneſs* to this one little Body?

M. This really would be ſomething like ſuppoſing your Chamber-Window and the whole

The ſecond Conference.

whole Room to be carried round the little Sphere, rather than that the Sphere itſelf ſhould be turned to the Light.

P. Let any Perſon, *Matho*, who contends that the Earth does not move, ſay, whether it receives any other Benefit from this whirling round of the whole Heavens, than the enjoying the Viciſſitude of Light and Darkneſs every four and twenty Hours.

M. I ſee no other Advantage it can be ſaid to receive.

P. But if the Sun alone could procure it this Advantage, by his revolving about it every Day; to what Purpoſe is it to bring in ſo many huge Bodies to perform this Effect, which do not contribute one Jot towards it?

M. As this would be quite ſuperfluous in Nature, ſo the Suppoſition ſeems to be very unnatural.

P. Wherefore, ſince they cannot ſuppoſe ſuch a diurnal Motion in the Sun alone, without ſuppoſing the whole Univerſe to be at once carried round; it is certainly more reaſonable in every reſpect, to acknowledge the Rotation of the Earth on its own Axis, than to raiſe ſuch an Infinity of Motion through all Nature to no End.

M. This is really ſo abſurd, that one cannot help conceiving an Indignation to hear that it is contended for: And I ſhould think the Opinion muſt have prevailed at firſt, becauſe Men were ignorant how ſmall a Body the Earth was, and of what Figure: For as a ſpherical

ſpherical Figure is moſt proper for ſuch a Rotation round an Axis, ſo it ſeems deſigned for this Motion.

P. And that it is more ſpherical or protuberant about the Equator, and flat towards the Poles (which I obſerved to you before) is owing to this diurnal Rotation: But we muſt content ourſelves with barely mentioning this Particular at preſent.

M. And yet I have ſome faint Notion of what you ſay: For if we again imagine the whole terraqueous Globe to be fluid, I plainly ſee it could not thus roll round on its own Axis, without *riſing* or *ſwelling* a little towards the Middle: And ſince the dry Land follows the Figure of the Ocean, or fluid Part of the Globe, I can eaſily allow that the whole terraqueous Globe muſt have ſuch a Figure.

P. This is helping yourſelf to right Conceptions of this Matter, from a Circumſtance I had forgot.

M. I fancy too I now ſee the Reaſon of a Particular, which you mentioned before; but left the Explication of it till a more proper Time.

P. Pray put me in mind of it.

M. You ſaid the Weight of the large Tracts of Mountains on the ſeveral Parts of the Earth muſt balance each other. Now if the Earth had ſuch a *Bunch* on one Side, without any Thing to balance it on the other, the Motion I conceive could not be ſmooth and equable, but *unequal* and *hobbling*. Unleſs our Tops

The ſecond Conference.

were rightly balanced and round, we could never get them to go ſmooth, or *ſpin*, as we call it.

P. Your Diverſions, *Matho*, are frequently of Uſe to us. If the Earth had ſuch an Excreſcence on one Side, without any Thing to poiſe it on the other, that would diſturb its *ſpinning* on an Axis, and at laſt ſpoil the habitable Globe. Take a Ring with a ſmall Stone in it, and give it a ſmart twirl on a ſmooth Table, ſo that the Stone may be about the Equator or middle of the Ring's Motion, and you will find the Ring will not whirl round with the Stone in that Poſition; but the Stone will riſe up till it be in the Pole of the Ring's Motion, and there it will keep. But if there were a like Stone on the other Side, they would both keep to the Equator, becauſe of their equal *centrifugal Force*, as it is called.

XXVI. *M.* You mentioned alſo another Particular lately, when ſpeaking of the ſpherical Figure of the heavenly Bodies, which ſeems ſtill to ſhew us farther how natural it is that the Earth ſhould have a diurnal Revolution on its Axis, and not the whole Heavens with all the innumerable Bodies in them.

P. Let me know what it was.

M. You ſaid *ſome of the cæleſtial Bodies, and among theſe the Sun himſelf, are always turning round, and ſhew us ſucceſſively all their different Sides*; which, if it be ſo, why ſhould not the Earth turn round likewiſe on its Axis, rather than

than all the Heavens keep ſuch an eternal whirling to ſave it the Trouble? The ſecond Conference.

P. It is very opportunely remembered, *Matho*; for *Jupiter*, the largeſt of the Planets, and far ſurpaſſing the Earth in Magnitude, is obſerved to roll round on his Axis in leſs than ten Hours: *Mars* performs a Revolution on his Axis in the ſame Time nearly as our Earth; and *Venus* in about twenty three Days, as has lately been diſcovered: Though *Saturn*'s great Diſtance from us, and *Mercury*'s being too near the Sun, has hitherto hindered the ſame Obſervation from being made upon them. Now laying aſide all the other Reaſons already mentioned, it is perfectly agreeable that the Earth, which is itſelf one of the Planets, ſhould have the ſame Motion as the reſt of them have (as far as our Obſervations can reach;) and that too a Motion ſo neceſſary to the Nature and Condition of a Planet. Nor is it leſs abſurd in us, the Inhabitants of this Globe, to contend that the whole Heavens ſhould wheel round in twenty four Hours, to anſwer its Neceſſities, rather than allow the Globe itſelf to move; than it would be in the Inhabitants of the Planet *Jupiter* (if any ſuch there be) to maintain that the Heavens muſt roll round that Planet in ten Hours, that all its Sides ſhould enjoy the Light ſucceſſively, rather than grant that their Habitation ſhould have ſuch a diurnal Motion.

M. And yet they would have the ſame Reaſon to contend for the one, as we have to con-

The ſecond Conference.

tend for the other; ſince *Jupiter*'s rolling round on his Axis in ten Hours would make the whole Heavens appear to them to turn round in that ſhort time, juſt as they ſeem to us to turn round in four and twenty Hours: Though it is plainly impoſſible that one and the ſame Revolution ſhould be performed in twenty four Hours, and in leſs than half that Time.

P. You run the Parallel between the two Suppoſitions very exactly, and might ſtill go farther: For to a Spectator on the Planet *Mars*, the Revolution of all the cœleſtial Bodies would ſeem to be performed in about twenty four Hours; and only in almoſt as many Days to one carried round on *Venus*. In ſhort, if all the Planets turn round on their Axes in different Times; the cœleſtial Bodies, though unmoved, would ſeem, to Spectators placed on theſe Planets, to revolve in as many different Times. Nay if any great Body rolled on its Axis from Eaſt to Weſt, while others really turn from Weſt to Eaſt, the Sun and Stars, to the different Spectators, would appear to turn from Weſt to Eaſt, and the contrary Way, at one and the ſame Time.

XXVII. *M.* I am ſatisfied from this Variety of Caſes, that the Senſes are bad Judges of the *reality* of Motion. But ſome Things you ſaid juſt now raiſe my Curioſity to a great Degree.

P. What are they?

M. I

The ſecond Conference.

M. I would gladly know in the firſt Place, why the Planets perform their Revolutions on their Axes in ſuch different Times, without any Reſpect, it ſeems, to their Magnitudes; as alſo, if it be yet diſcovered how much higher the Earth is about its Equator, than at the Poles; and if *Jupiter*, which rolls round ſo much ſooner, hath his Equator thus raiſed?

P. It will be proper, *Matho*, to delay the Conſideration of *theſe Niceties* for ſome Time.

M. Let it be ſo then: But as you have made Mention of ſeveral Planets, which, as far as I can gather from your Words, ſeem to be of the ſame Nature with our Earth, which you alſo called a Planet; and as you ſpoke of the *Diſtance* of *Saturn*, the *Magnitude* of *Jupiter*, and the *Nearneſs* of *Mercury* to the Sun, pray explain this Matter more fully. As theſe Things are quite new to me, I imagine they muſt be very entertaining; eſpecially, ſince you ſpoke as if it were not impoſſible that the Planet *Jupiter* might have ſome Inhabitants reſiding on him.

P. To ſatisfy you in ſome Sort, I ſhall ſhew you, in few Words, the true Conſtitution of what is called the *Solar* or *Planetary Syſtem*, and give you a Scheme of it, done by a careful and curious Hand, which will make the Thing more intelligible than Words can do.

M. I am glad of that; for, as you obſerved, *the Imagination is beſt informed from the Eyes.*—

P. In the Center of the whole Syſtem is the *Sun* himſelf, which, notwithſtanding the diminutive Appearance he makes to us at this Di-

The ſecond Conference.

ſtance, is an *immenſe Ocean* of Heat and Light. Next to the Sun is the Planet *Mercury*, which performs a Revolution round him in about three Months time; for *Mercury*'s Motion is more ſwift than that of any other Planet. As he never removes far from the dazling Light of the Sun, it is difficult to get a View of him; yet ſometimes he is ſeen as a dark Spot on the Sun's Diſk, as he paſſes betwixt him and us. Above *Mercury* is *Venus*, which makes a fine Appearance in the Heavens, ſeeming to dart a ſtrong and beautiful Light. She finiſhes her Circuit about the Sun in two hundred and twenty-five Days, or ſeven Months and a half nearly. Next to *Venus* is our *Earth*, which together with the *Moon*, as an *Attendant*, completes its Courſe round the Sun in the Space of a Year, in which Time the Moon revolves about it, as a Center between twelve and thirteen Times. Above our Earth is *Mars*, being the fourth in order from the Sun, and takes up near two Years, or ſix hundred and eighty ſeven Days in moving round him: For the Motion of the upper Planets becomes always ſlower. At a great Diſtance above *Mars* is *Jupiter*, the ſtatelieſt and moſt majeſtick of the Planets. He hath four Moons, not unlike *ours*, rolling about him, one without another; which, conſidering the ſhort Duration of their Revolutions, afford a delightful Spectacle, and conſtant Variety of Appearances to a Spectator there. This Planet requires little leſs than twelve whole Years to complete his Period round the Sun. Laſt of all

all comes *Saturn*, and cloſes up the *planetary Chorus*; for his exterior and ample Orbit ſurrounds them all. As he is the remoteſt from the Sun, he incloſes the Syſtem with State and Dignity, having a miraculous Sort of an *Arch* or *Ring* about him, in which he ſeems to hang pendulous; and without that Arch are five Moons, which attend him through his whole Courſe, as the Moon does our Earth. The Motion of this Planet being the ſloweſt of all, before he can finiſh his tedious Journey round the common Center of the Planets, it is twenty nine Years and near an half.—— Theſe are the *ſeventeen Bodies* that make up the Solar Syſtem; and, as I ſaid, this Scheme will repreſent to you their Order from the Sun, and the Orbits, as well of the ſix *primary* Planets, as of the ten Moons, or *ſecondary* Planets, which are alſo called *Satellites*. You have likewiſe marked on the ſame Sheet their *periodical Times*, and the Proportion of their Diſtances from the Sun, with other Particulars neceſſary to be known, which I would adviſe you to imprint on your Memory; for every Thing in this Syſtem is *Proportion* and *Regularity*.

M. I ſhall endeavour to obey you. But theſe ſeventeen Bodies are but a ſmall Part of thoſe Lights we obſerve in the Heavens.

P. And but a very ſmall Part of them too: For beyond the Limits of our planetary World, and at an immenſe Diſtance without the Orbit of *Saturn*, are the *fixt Stars*,

The ſecond Conference.

which you ſee ſparkling in a *Winter Even-ing*, with ſuch various Splendor and Magnitudes.

M. How pleaſant muſt the intelligent Contemplation of theſe Things be, when the bare hearing of them, and looking on this *Diagram*, throws me into ſuch an Extaſy of Wonder and Delight!——But here again I muſt beg a Reſpite of you for ſome Days, till I digeſt a little in my Mind theſe different Particulars: Leſt the *Novelty* and *Variety* ſhould make me either confound or quite loſe them.

P. You call the *renewing* of your Toil a *Reſpite* from it: But I willingly conſent to what I had deſigned to have aſked of you, if you had not prevented me.

THE
Third CONFERENCE.

Objections againſt the diurnal Motion of the Earth on its Axis anſwered. The difference between abſolute and relative, true and apparent Motion, familiarly explained. Of the Magnitude of the Sun in reſpect to the Earth. A Reaſon why the Sun ſhould be ſo big. The Arguments which ſhew the annual Motion *of the Earth. How that Motion is known by the Stars in the Night Time. That the great Changes in Nature, with reſpect to us, are owing to the diurnal and annual Motions of the Earth. How the Viciſſitudes of the* Seaſons, *and lengthening or ſhortening of the Days and Nights are cauſed by theſe two Motions.*

XXVIII. *P.* I Am glad, *Matho*, to ſee you here again. How do you like the Subjects we were upon in our laſt Converſation? The third Conference.

M. Extremely well; for I think I enter into the Reaſons of Things pretty exactly, and have got by Heart what only required Memory.

P. Have you no remaining Doubts concerning the diurnal Motion of the Earth on its Axis?

M. I

The third Conference.

M. I went away, you know, full of it; and am ſtill ſatisfied of the Reality of that Motion; but was not able to ſatisfy my Companions, ſo as to bring them over to my Side.

P. Why ſo?

M. They obſerved, if we throw a Stone directly up, that it falls down juſt at our Feet again. But if the Earth whirled with ſuch Rapidity from Weſt to Eaſt, the Part, from which the Stone was thrown up, muſt be carried a conſiderable Way eaſtward, while the Stone is in the Air; ſo that it would fall to the Weſt of the Part from whence it was caſt up.

P. This is a very common Prejudice, and pardonable in young People.

M. From this I raiſed ſome other Difficulties to myſelf; as why the Birds, when they fly, do not ſeem ſtill to be carried weſtward, while the Earth moves ſo ſwiftly below them the contrary Way. I have alſo obſerved, if I run with ſome Violence, a Breeze always meets me in the Face, though there be no Air ſtirring: Whence I think there ought conſtantly to be a ſtrong Wind from the Eaſt, while the Place we are in is carried from the Weſt with ſuch Velocity. If theſe Difficulties could be eaſily removed, I ſhould be able, I think, to deal with my Adverſaries.

P. Before they can be removed, you muſt underſtand a certain *Maxim* in Philoſophy, which is, *That a Body placed any where, partakes of the Motion of its Place.*

M. Explain the Maxim by an Example.

P. If

P. If a Ship be under Sail, and move ſmoothly along, the ſeveral Motions of People below Deck, or walking above, are performed in the ſame manner, as if the Ship ſtood ſtill.

M. This I underſtand tolerably well; for though I was never at Sea, yet I have been in a Ship while ſhe was going out of the Harbour: But ſtill it does not ſatisfy me. I think it ſhews rather, that a Body, which is contained in a Thing, partakes of the Motion of that Thing which contains it; be it Ship, Veſſel, or whatever elſe we pleaſe to ſuppoſe. How can the Earth be ſaid to contain the *Stone*, or *Bird*, which is in the Air? Or how can it be the *Place* of theſe, when quite ſeparated from it?

P. You are hard to pleaſe, I find: But ſince this will not do, let us come to another Inſtance.——Suppoſitions, you know, coſt nothing; and provided they be not impoſſible, we may make them at Pleaſure, in order to reaſon from them.

M. This I have obſerved from ſome Suppoſitions you have made before.

XXIX. *P.* Suppoſe then there was a *Plain*, like the Floor of this Chamber, moving ſmoothly along the Ground, which you may alſo ſuppoſe to be level like a Bowling-green; and we may imagine this Plain to be extended to any Breadth we have a Mind. Let us likewiſe ſuppoſe, that a *Frog* is carried along upon it.

M. I long to ſee the Event of this Suppoſition.

P. You

The third Conference.

P. You will eaſily allow that the Frog would leap, and perform all its Motions on this Plain, in the ſame Manner as if it had no Motion.

M. Certainly; for it is the ſame Thing as if ſhe were on the Deck of a Ship.

P. I ſhall go on then with the ſeveral Caſes of my Suppoſition, without expecting your Aſſent, or Diſſent, 'till I have done: And then you may give me your Judgment.

M. We ſhall, indeed, ſave Words by that Means.

P. If the utmoſt Extent to which the *Animal* could leap was two Feet, it could leap ſo far on the Plain, whether that moved, or ſtood ſtill. Imagine now the Creature to jump two Feet in a Direction preciſely oppoſite to the Direction of the moving Plain, and that the Plain moved juſt two Feet in the Time of the Frog's Leap, or while it was in the Air. Here it is evident that the Frog, taking its Leap the contrary Way to the Motion of the Plain, would reach two Feet from the Place it ſtood on: But by Suppoſition, the Plain moves juſt as much the contrary Way. If therefore there were a Hole in the Plain juſt where the Frog was to light, it would fall on the ſame Part of the Ground, over which it ſtood when it began to jump. This is the firſt Caſe. Suppoſe now it jumps the other Way, or in the ſame Direction with the Motion of the Plain; it will then likewiſe reach two Feet from the Place it ſtood on, and the Plain moves two

Feet

Feet the ſame Way in the ſame Time: So that if there was a Hole in the Plain where the Creature was to light, it would fall on the Ground four Feet from the Place above which it began its Leap. In the firſt Caſe, the *yielding*, or contrary Motion of the Plain, when the Animal puſhed it to begin its Leap, has ſuch Effect, that it carries the Creature as much backward, as its own Effort carries it forward: So that with Reſpect to the Ground below the Plain, it neither moves backward nor forward; nor has its Jump any other Effect, than if it had leapt perpendicularly up, and fallen down again. And any one, not carried along, but obſerving the Motion of the Animal, without attending to that of the Plain, would imagine that it roſe, and fell back perpendicularly. In the ſecond Caſe, the conſpiring Motion of the Plain carries it twice as much forward, with Reſpect to the Ground below, as its own ſingle Effort could do.

M. Pray let me ſpeak a Word.

P. That is againſt Conditions.

M. One ſingle Word, to tell you that I conceive this, and have obſerved, when ſome of us have been in a Boat, and rowing againſt the Stream with all our Might, all we could do was only not to be carried down, but keep oppoſite to the ſame Part of the Bank of the River: But if we rowed down with equal Force, we made Way at a great Rate. I have done.

P. Let

The third Conference.

P. Let us ſuppoſe in the third Place, that the Frog jumps to a Side with Reſpect to the Direction of the Plain's Motion, or two Feet ſtraight outward; and imagine that on the Ground below, from the Part over which the Creature makes its Leap, there is a *Square* deſcribed for two Feet outward, to the ſame Side. The Animal will leap ſtraight outward, to a Point two Feet diſtant; and that Point is, in the interim, carried two Feet downward, by the Motion of the Plain: So that if there were a Hole at that Point, it would light juſt in the oppoſite Angle of the Square on the Ground; and muſt therefore, while it jumpt ſtraight outward with Reſpect to the Plain, have always been above the Diameter, or *Diagonal* of the Square, with Reſpect to the Ground.

M. I beg you would hear me but one Word again.

P. Then you may go on by yourſelf, *Matho.*

M. You'll own it is worth your while to hear me. I can ſhew this by a Piece of Paper moving along another Piece of Paper; and that by drawing a Line ſideways on the upper Paper, and a Square below that on the under Paper, as you ſuppoſed to be done on the Ground, a Creature, that moved from End to End of the Line, ſhould move from Angle to Angle of the Square below. Do I not rightly apprehend it?

P. You do indeed. In the laſt Place then, let us imagine that the Creature jumps perpendicularly up, and that the Time or Duration

tion of the Leap is the ſame as before. It muſt fall down again on the ſame Part from which it roſe, as well when the Plain moves, as when it ſtands ſtill: For in the former Caſes, its Diſtances on the Plain were the ſame, as if that had been without any Motion: But this Place it alights on now is carried down two Feet, while the Animal is in the Air: And if there were a Hole there, it would fall on the Ground two Feet below the Place from above which it roſe. With Reſpect to the Plain, therefore, its Motion is a perpendicular Aſcent and Deſcent; but with Reſpect to the Ground, it is ſuch a *Curve*, as a Frog commonly deſcribes, when it leaps upon the Ground. Now, *Matho*, you are at Liberty to ſpeak——

XXX. *M.* I conceive this well enough; but am ſtudying to find out ſome Way to repreſent the two different Appearances of this ſingle Motion.——Suppoſe the Plain moving on the ſame Level with the Top of a Wall, and that you were on the other Side, not ſeeing the Plain moving along, but only the Animal as it mounts up and comes down; though it comes down on the ſame Part of the Plain from which it roſe, you would think that it jumpt along the Top of the Wall.

P. You are right: The ſame Motion muſt make a different Appearance to one carried along with the Plain, and to another ſtanding on the Ground. Imagine now, there was no more a Plain in all theſe Caſes, but only that the

The third Conference.

the Part the Animal ſtands on hath the ſame Motion the Plain was ſuppoſed to have; and the Diſtances on the Ground, and the Places of alighting, will be the ſame as before. The Creature would either fall on the Place immediately below where it ſtood, four Feet downward; move above the Diagonal of a Square; or fall two Feet below, as in the ſeveral Suppoſitions above. For the Exiſtence of the Plain hath no Effect on its Motion while it is in the Air.

M. I am entirely ſatisfied about every Particular of this; nevertheleſs, when you ſum up all in ſo few Words, the Thing ſeems ſcarce credible. I am ſure I could not have underſtood it, without the ſeveral Suppoſitions you have made.

P. Hence you will perceive what is to be ſaid to the Objection of a Stone thrown perpendicularly upward.

M. I perceive, though it riſes and falls perpendicularly, with Relation to the Ground, yet abſolutely ſpeaking, it is carried along with the Earth all the Time, or partakes of its Motion to the Eaſt; juſt as the Animal was carried along with the Plain, becauſe it took its Riſe from that when in Motion.

P. You will likewiſe eaſily conceive, if the Stone be thrown eaſtward, or weſtward, (that is, *with*, or *againſt* the Earth's Motion,) it muſt ſtill be carried Eaſt; unleſs we ſuppoſe the Force, with which the Stone is projected, ſuch, that the Projection ſhould carry it as much

much Weſt, as the Motion of the Earth carried it Eaſt. Then abſolutely ſpeaking, the Stone would neither move Eaſt nor Weſt. And if the Stone were projected with ſtill greater Force, it ſhould really move weſtward. The third Conference.

M. I underſtand; for if, in the firſt Caſe above, the Jump of the Frog had been three Feet, in the Time that the Plain moved two, the Creature ſhould have fallen on the Ground a Foot beyond the Place above which it made the Leap. I underſtand likewiſe, if the Stone is thrown neither with, nor againſt the Earth's Motion, but to a Side, that is, ſouthward or northward, that in the Time it is carried South or North, with Reſpect to the Earth, it will alſo, by partaking of the Earth's Motion, be carried eaſtward; ſo that abſolutely ſpeaking, it will be carried South-eaſt, or North-eaſt, as where the Frog moved above the Diagonal of a Square.

P. Nor will you find it difficult to conceive how any other *Projectile*, a *Bomb*, or *Canon-Ball*, for Inſtance, muſt partake of the Motion of the Earth, in whatever Direction it is projected.

M. I perceive what may be ſaid in all theſe Caſes. The *Ball*, or *Bomb*, by partaking of the Earth's Motion, is thrown to the ſame Diſtance, and hits the Mark in the ſame Manner, as if the Earth did not move: So that ſuch *Inſtances* as theſe can be no longer any Objection to the Earth's Motion.

P. As to your next Difficulty then.

The third Conference.

M. There is ſomething that occurs, from what we have been ſaying juſt now, which I would willingly firſt ſpeak to.

P. What is it?

XXXI. *M.* I am conſidering with myſelf, how really diſtinct *abſolute* and *relative* Motions are; and yet how difficult it is ſometimes to diſtinguiſh the one from the other.

P. Thoſe who confound theſe two Motions, *Matho*, make their *Senſe*, and not *Reaſon*, Judge of the Reality of Motion: But let me know, by an Example, where your Difficulty lies.

M. In the Inſtance you gave juſt now of *a Body projected to the Weſt, with the ſame Celerity the Earth is carried to the Eaſt*, we ſhould fancy it to move very ſwiftly to the *Weſt*, and be ignorant, in the mean while, that we ourſelves were only moving with that Celerity to the *Eaſt*.

P. This is no more than what you yourſelf obſerved before, when you ſaid you were ſatisfied from a Variety of Inſtances, *That the Senſes are bad Judges of the Reality of Motion.*

M. This I ſaid, and am ſtill convinced of it; and that we are to judge of real Motion by Reaſon, and not the dubious Informations of Senſe. But I would know the true Difference between real and apparent Motion, by the Help of which Difference Reaſon may diſtinguiſh between them.

P. The

P. The Difference in few Words is this, a Body may appear to move without any Force impreſſed upon it; that is, the Diſtance between it and other Bodies may be changed, without its receiving any Impulſe to make it change its Place: But a Force muſt neceſſarily be impreſſed to put a Body in real Motion, or to ſtop it again when moving.

M. Therefore wherever there is a relative Motion, there muſt be real Motion in ſome of the Bodies?

P. Certainly; for if all the Bodies in the Univerſe were at Reſt, the Diſtance between any of them could not be changed, unleſs a Force were impreſſed on ſome of them at leaſt.

M. And on the contrary, wherever there is real Motion, there muſt be a relative Motion, or Change of Diſtance.

P. That doth by no Means follow.

M. Pray ſhew me how it can be otherwiſe: For I think they muſt neceſſarily accompany each other.

P. Imagine there was but one Body in Nature, as our Earth, and that no Force was impreſſed upon it; would it move, do you think, in that Caſe?

M. It could not without ſome external Force to put it in Motion.

P. Imagine then that ſome *Mighty Hand* impreſſed a Force upon it; and tell me what the Effect of that Force would be?

M. It would certainly be moved, whether any other Body exiſted or not, the Diſtance

The third Conference.

between which and it might be changed: For it is Nonſenſe to ſay that a *Force impreſſed and no Force impreſſed*, ſhould both have the ſame Effect.

P. You are right *Matho:* Real Motion doth not depend on Change of Diſtance, or the Exiſtence of another Body; though relative Motion doth. For take it thus; Imagine that two Bodies only were created in Nature, and a Force impreſſed on one of them ſufficient to move it with a certain Degree of Celerity; you know it would move on without End in the immenſe Space, and with the ſame Celerity ſtill.

M. You have already ſatisfied me of that.

P. Suppoſe then, after any Time, that the Body, on which no Force was impreſſed, were annihilated, or removed out of Exiſtence, by the ſame mighty Power that created it; and tell me then, would the taking away of this Body deſtroy the Motion of the other?

M. No more than taking my Ball off the *Billiard-Table* would hinder my Companion's from moving upon it.

P. Or ſuppoſe the Body to be reproduced again; would the *firſt Body* begin to move anew? Or would it move, or not move, according to the Exiſtence or Non-exiſtence of the other?

M. I am convinced of the double Abſurdity; either that a Body ſhould begin to move without a Force impreſſed, or ceaſe to move without an Obſtacle. This indeed is extremely pleaſant and intelligible.

P. Suppoſe

The third Conference.

P. Suppoſe again that only our Earth and Moon exiſted, and that the Moon rolled about the immoveable Earth at the ſame Diſtance as at preſent. Here is both real and apparent Motion, becauſe the Moon is ſucceſſively oppoſite to the different Sides of the Earth: But if we ſuppoſe the Earth ſo to be turned round on its Axis, as to keep the ſame Side always expoſed to the Moon, this will take away the relative Motion: Yet it would be fooliſh to maintain, that giving a Motion to the Earth on its Axis took away the Motion of another Body.

M. It would be a new Kind of Abſurdity to affirm that, if both of them moved, neither of them could move.

P. Suppoſe again, that only two Bodies exiſted in Nature, and that both of them were put in Motion with the ſame Celerity, and in the ſame or parallel Directions, and there will be real Motion in both theſe without Change of Diſtance, or relative Motion. The ſame alſo might be ſhewn of any Number, or Syſtem of Bodies; if they were all urged in parallel Directions, and with equal Celerity.

M. This is all mighty clear.

XXXII. Now to my other Objection concerning *Birds* while ſuſpended in the Air, which ſeems, I think, more difficult than the former.

P. On what are they ſuſpended?

M. They ſupport themſelves in the Air, and fly through it by the Motion of their

The third Conference.

Wings, with which they ſtrike againſt the Air: For if you move a ſingle Feather ſwiftly you will find the Air make a conſiderable Reſiſtance to it, as I have often tried. But my Difficulty is not concerning their Flight, but how they partake of the Motion of the Earth, and are carried round with it, though raiſed above, and quite ſeparated from it.

P. Well, it is eaſy to conceive that Birds partake of the Motion of the Earth, even while they are in the Air; as much as the Frog did above the moving Plain.

M. I ſhould allow that it might be ſo, if the Flight of a Bird was ſuch a Motion as the Leap of a Frog; but it reſembles more, I think, the ſwiming of a Fiſh: For after they take their *Riſe* from the Ground, they move faſt or ſlow, as they have a Mind. And I have often obſerved a *Kite* ſeem to ſtand ſtill a conſiderable Time, without moving his Wings at all.

P. Tell me, *Matho*, how are the Fiſhes of the Sea carried round by the Motion of the Earth?

M. They are carried round in the Water of the Sea, which is carried round by the Motion of the Earth.

P. How comes the Water of the Sea to be carried round by the Motion of the ſolid Part of the Earth? For if you take a *ſhallow Veſſel*, not full of Water, and move it to one Side with no great Velocity, the Water will flow over the Brim of the Veſſel the contrary Way. Whence, as the Earth began to whirl ſwiftly eaſtward, the Water of the Ocean ſhould not

have

have taken the Motion, but have flowed weſtward, till it had been ſpread all around the whole Surface of the Globe.

M. I ſuppoſe, when the Earth firſt received its diurnal Motion, the Force which produced *that* Motion was impreſſed as well on the fluid, as on the ſolid Part of the Globe; ſo that there could be no Hazard of the Sea's overwhelming the dry Land.

P. You are certainly right; it was as eaſy to impreſs the Motion on the one Part as the other: And without that the Effect could not have been completed. Beſides a dreadful Commotion and Uproar muſt have enſued on the Face of the Earth, whilſt the Waters daſhed with inconceivable Fury againſt the ſolid Prominencies and Sides of Mountains. But if we were willing to ſuppoſe all this Tempeſt, the Event muſt at laſt have been the ſame as on your Suppoſition.

M. That I do not underſtand; pray ſhew me how it might have been?

P. It is not indeed to our preſent Purpoſe; but as it may give you fuller Notions of theſe Things, I ſhall endeavour to obey you. Though the Water of the Sea muſt at firſt have been put into a terrible Commotion, and ſpread round the Face of the Globe, it would gradually have taken the Earth's Motion, and at laſt been carried round with equal Celerity. And being then relatively at Reſt, it would have fought the lower Parts, and formed the Ocean as at preſent.

The third Conference.

M. Pray explain the Caſe more particularly: This gives me but a confuſed Notion.

P. You know in the preſent State of Things, the Sea, Rivers, Brooks, *&c.* partake of the Earth's Rotation on it's Axis.

M. They do.

P. And moving with the ſame Celerity, they are relatively at Reſt with reſpect to the dry Land, or ſolid Part of the Globe.

M. The Sea, or a Lake, or Pool, is as much at reſt with reſpect to its Bottom, as a Stone with reſpect to the Ground on which it lies.

P. When the Water therefore moves with the ſame Celerity as the Earth on which it is, that doth not hinder it to run down in Rills, Brooks, and Rivers, wherever it finds a Deſcent.

M. It doth not indeed; for being relatively at Reſt with reſpect to the Ground, it runs down the ſame Way on any Declivity, as if the Ground were without all Motion.

P. Though the Motion on its Axis then had only been at firſt impreſſed on the ſolid Part of the Earth, ſo that on the firſt Commencement of the diurnal Rotation the fluid Part would have ſpread round the Surface of the Globe; yet in Time it muſt have had the Motion impreſt upon it, and at laſt have been carried round with the ſame Celerity as the ſolid Part.

M. It muſt indeed; for we cannot ſuppoſe it to have kept ſtill equally ſpread, without ſuppoſing it to be carried round with the ſame Celerity:

Celerity: And it could not gather into Heights becauſe of its Gravity.

P. Therefore the Water on the Globe coming at laſt to have the whole Celerity of the Earth impreſt upon itſelf, or being relatively at Reſt with reſpect to the Earth, muſt have ſought to the lower Parts, and formed the Ocean according to the Hollows it found.

M. Now I ſee plainly that the Event muſt have been the ſame at laſt in either Caſe. But might we not likewiſe ſuppoſe, that the diurnal Rotation was impreſt by Degrees to prevent ſuch Diſorders?

P. We Mortals are forced to proceed thus gradually in moſt Things; becauſe we have neither Power nor Skill to do otherwiſe: But there is no Parity in the two Caſes. This Suppoſition however might be made, provided it be not underſtood as a Mark of Impotence in the Cauſe.

XXXIII. *M.* Well, all this is extremely pleaſant, and by it, I think, I perceive what may be ſaid in the Caſe of the Birds being carried round with the Earth, and partaking of its Motion.

P. How then could you ſatisfy yourſelf as to that Point?

M. The Air muſt partake of the ſame Motion with the Earth; ſo that Birds fly up and down in it, as if the Earth, or it, had no ſuch Rotation.

P. So far you are right: And how came the Air by this Motion?

The third Conference.

M. I imagine the ſame Motion muſt have been at firſt impreſſed on it, as on the *Earth* or *Sea:* For the Earth could not ſoon have impreſſed a Motion on ſuch a Fluid, ſo as to carry it about with equal Celerity. And all the intermediate Time, it muſt, by not moving along with the Earth, have raiſed dreadful *Tempeſts*, both on the Face of the Waters and dry Land.

P. A Motion of the Air, *Matho*, much leſs rapid than this would be, raiſes Storms which beat down Houſes, tear the Trees up by the Roots, and work the greateſt Deſolation both by Sea and Land. So that if we add the Diſorders of both *Elements* together (the *Sea* and *Air)* they are perfectly inconceivable: But their Rage we find is bridled down, and our Globe rendered habitable.

M. It is indeed amazing that our Bodies ſhould be conſtantly hurried along with ſuch prodigious Impetuoſity, amidſt ſuch furious Elements, and irreſiſtible Motions, and yet that we ſhould be as little incommoded by theſe, and even as inſenſible of them, as if nothing ſtirred in Nature! So little indeed that Men deny they are! The Liquor in the Cup is not ſhaken, the *Infant* that has but juſt Strength to ſtand upright is not moleſted, and every Thing is as ſtable and firm as if our Earth reſted on ſome eternal Foundation!

P. The Reflection is pertinent. If theſe Elements were not ſometimes allowed to break looſe,

looſe, we ſhould be ignorant how powerfully our Safety was wrought. The third Conference.

M. From all this I now perceive that my laſt Objection to the Earth's Motion was entirely groundleſs: Since the Air is carried round with the ſame Velocity as the Earth, there cannot be a conſtant Wind from the *Eaſt* (as I fancied) ſweeping over the Plains of the Ocean, and bearing againſt the Sides of the Mountains.

P. There could not, ſince the whole Maſs of Air, or *Atmoſphere* (as it is called) is carried with equal Rapidity the ſame Way.

M. From hence I perceive, if a Body were ſuſpended above the Earth, ſo as not to partake of it's Motion, there would be a *furious Guſt* againſt the Weſtern Side of it, while the Air ruſhed violently by it to the *Eaſt*.

P. Such Body would rather be carried along with the impetuous Motion of the Atmoſphere, if not raiſed above the Height of it.

M. You have ſaid that the Moon is carried round our Earth: Pray is ſhe thus carried round by the Force of the revolving Atmoſphere?

P. Nothing like it, *Matho:* She is carried round by quite another Law of Motion, nor does the Atmoſphere reach ſo high.

M. How high doth it reach above the Surface of the Earth?

P. All *Appearances* in the Atmoſphere ſhew, that it doth not riſe one Semidiameter of the Earth above our Heads; and the Moon, you know, is ſixty Semidiameters from us.

The

The third Conference.

The true Limits of it, indeed, are not certainly known: The common conjecture is, that it doth not extend to above forty-five, or fifty Miles; though poſſibly a farther Conſideration of the *ſtreaming Lights*, which appear ſo frequently in the Air of late Years, may ſhew that it riſes conſiderably higher.

M. What Force then carries the Moon round the Earth, twelve or thirteen Times a Year? For that is a Point I want chiefly to be ſatisfied about.

P. Are not all the other ſecondary Planets, or Moons, thus carried about their *Primaries*; and the primary Planets themſelves thus carried round the Sun, the common Center of the Syſtem?

M. They are; and that makes the Solution of the Queſtion of greater Importance.

P. To tell you this at preſent would do you no manner of Service; it would be like ſpeaking to you in an unknown Language.

M. But if I come to it in a proper Time, it will relieve me of a Pain, as meat does of Hunger?

P. You are right.

M. Well, I deſiſt. But this brings to my Mind one ſmall Difficulty more, and then I have done with my Objections.

P. What is it?

M. It is with reſpect to our *upward* and *downward*. You allowed, and taught me, that *upward* and *downward* regarded only the Centers of particular Bodies, as our Earth, or the

the Sun: And yet in ſpeaking of the Order of the Planets from the Sun, you ſaid *Venus* was above *Mercury*, *Mars* above our *Earth*, and *Jupiter* above *Mars*; by which I underſtand, you reckon them all upward from the Sun. This perplexes me.

P. The Conſideration of this Affair muſt likewiſe be put off till another Time.

XXXIV. However, from this I perceive you have the Order of the Solar Syſtem in your Head.

M. I told you I have every Thing by Heart that only requires Memory. I can ſet up the whole Scheme in my Imagination at any Time; but find it difficult to abſtract from the Diagram on the Paper, and apply theſe Motions to the great Bodies themſelves in the Heavens. Yet ſometimes, when without Doors, I endeavour to ſuppoſe that I am carried round the Sun with the Earth; having *Mercury* and *Venus* on the inner Side, or between me and the Sun, with *Mars*, *Jupiter*, and *Saturn*, on the other Side.

P. That is not a bare Suppoſition, *Matho*, but according to the Reality of Things. You take the right Method in making yourſelf familiar with the Heavens themſelves: They ſuggeſt quite other Notions, than Schemes within Doors can do; and a little Practice will make the Thing eaſy to you.

M. But while I am thus employed, many Things want Explication; and I have not you at Hand.

P. You

The third Conference.

P. You will ſoon require a more ſkilfull Guide: But in the mean Time I ſhall convince you, rather of my Want of Ability than Inclination to ſerve you; and in this View only you may propoſe your Difficulties.

M. In the firſt place I would know what may be the true Magnitude of the Sun; becauſe I obſerved in your Deſcription of the Solar Syſtem, you called *him a vaſt Ocean of Heat and Light*.

P. I have told you already, *Matho*, that the Diſtance of the Sun from the Earth is ſo great, that any Method of meaſuring, hitherto contrived, cannot aſcertain it; though ſome of theſe Methods are extremely ſubtile and ingenious: And without knowing the Diſtance of the Sun, we cannot be certain of his true Magnitude.

M. I underſtand. They, who make his Diſtance from us to be 30000 Semediameters of the Earth, muſt ſuppoſe him larger; and they who make it leſs muſt ſuppoſe him ſmaller; that he may ſtill make the ſame Appearance to the Eye.

P. You are right. Now we ſhall leſs err in making him too large, if we ſuppoſe his Diſtance to be only moderately great: And if we imagine *that* to be about 20000 Semidiameters of the Earth, his Breadth, or Diameter, will be ſome more than ninety Times as great as the Earth's. And ſince the Diſtance of the Moon from the Earth is only ſixty Semidiameters of the Earth; if the Sun were placed where

where the Earth is, his Body would fill the whole Orbit of the Moon, and reach near 120000 Miles above it.

M. Prodigious! It is not without Reaſon that you called him *a vaſt Ocean of Heat and Light.*

XXXV. *P.* You will form a better Notion of the Largeneſs of the Sun's Body, from this coarſe plain Repreſentation of it, than by expreſſing the Proportion between it and our Earth in Numbers only. But this Scheme will ſhew to your Eye how large he is with reſpect to the other Planets, according to the Opinion of the *celebrated Monſieur Huygens*, who makes the Sun's Semidiameter a hundred and eleven Times longer than the Earth's.

M. Pray let me conſider it.——What a different Appearance is this! The Sun here indeed makes a grand and noble Figure, in Compariſon of the Planets.——Alas! What a ſmall Thing is our Earth! How is it ſhrunk up!

P. Yet this is that *mighty Point*, about which the Sun, and all the Heavens too, ſhould revolve every Day.

M. Here is *Saturn* I ſee encompaſſed with the *miraculous Arch* you ſpoke of. How much more juſtly might this Planet, or *Jupiter* there, which is indeed by far the greateſt of the Planets, challenge the Pre-eminence of having the Heavens to roll about them? What a Difference there is between the Reality of Things and the Appearance they make!

P. That

The third Conference.

P. That Reflection, *Matho*, is equally applicable to moſt Things we know.

M. I no longer wonder that the Sun ſhould ſtill appear equally big over the whole Face of the Earth; for this is only to appear equally big over the whole Surface of a Point. Nor is the Reaſon hard, I think, to be found out, why he ſhould be ſuch a vaſt Body.

P. What Reaſon, think you, can be aſſigned for it?

M. It is, I ſuppoſe, becauſe the *Heat* and *Light* of the Sun were to be diffuſed through the whole Syſtem, as far as *Saturn* himſelf, whoſe Diſtance from the Sun, as I underſtand from the former Diagram, is near ten Times greater than the Diſtance of the Earth from him.

P. You are perfectly right, this is one Reaſon: But upon another Account alſo, a Body containing a prodigious Maſs of Matter was to be placed in the Center of the Syſtem.

M. Pray tell me on what other Account.

P. It would not give you half the Pleaſure, nor do you half the Service to have another tell it you, that it would do to find it out yourſelf; which I foreſee you will eaſily do hereafter.

M. I ſhall be directed by you.

XXXVI. In the mean Time it is proper to acquaint you, that ſome Philoſophers place the Earth, and not the Sun, in the Center of our Syſtem.

M. And

M. And how do they diſpoſe of the Sun in that Caſe?

P. In the fourth Place from the Earth, having put in the *Moon*, *Mercury*, and *Venus*, between him and the Earth; about which they ſay he revolves among the reſt of the Planets in the Space of one Year.

M. That is, having ſuppoſed the Earth immoveable in the Center, they aſcribe its Motion to the Sun.

P. It is ſo: And I would know your Thoughts of this Diſpoſition of the Syſtem.

M. Truly I think it is not quite ſo proper, that the nobleſt Body of the Syſtem ſhould revolve about one of the leaſt Bodies in it; and (which ſeems worſe) that the *Fountain of Heat and Light* to the whole Syſtem (for ſuch I think we may call the Sun) ſhould leave the Center, the moſt proper Place for diſpenſing theſe equally, and go here and there, to chear one Part of it, while the other Parts are left languiſhing and uncomfortable till his return.

P. It would ſeem ſo to an unprejudiced Perſon.

M. Beſides, *Philon*, after what you have ſhewed me concerning the diurnal Motion of the Earth, which the Sun and whole Heavens were brought in to ſupply, I would be cautious in aſcribing the Earth's Motion to the Sun in any Caſe: For it looks ſuſpicious as if this were only from miſtaking *apparent* for *true Motion.*

The third Conference.

P. That Miſtake is indeed the Foundation of this whole *Hypotheſis*. But there is an eaſy Way of diſcerning how falſe the Hypotheſis is; for if the *Sun*, *Venus*, and *Mercury* finiſhed their Revolutions about the Earth in ſuch different Times, it muſt of Neceſſity happen, that, while the *Sun* is on one Side of the Earth in the Center, *Venus* or *Mercury* muſt be on the oppoſite Side; as now the Earth and either of theſe Planets are frequently on oppoſite Sides of the Sun. But this never happens, nor can happen, ſince the Sun is in the Center.

M. I think I underſtand the Force of this Argument, by the Help of my Scheme here: For ſince the Orbit of the Earth is exterior to that of *Venus*, or *Mercury*, they can never get to the Side of the Earth, oppoſite to the Sun. But if the Earth were placed in the Center, what happens to the Sun now would happen to the Earth then.

P. You are Maſter of the Argument; but will ſee the irreconcilable Difference better, by conſidering likewiſe this other Scheme, which repreſents the Syſtem of the World, according to the Opinion *of theſe* Philoſophers. It is called the *Ptolemaick*, as the former is called the *Copernican* or *Pythagorean Syſtem*.——

M. I ſee here indeed their Orbits in the Order you mentioned; and by comparing the two Syſtems together, the Force of this Argument appears very obvious.

P. There are beſides, *Matho*, other Appearances in the Heavens, which can never be naturally

turally accounted for, if we place the Earth in the Center of the Syſtem. For the other Planets ſeem to us, ſometimes to *ſtand ſtill*, and ſometimes to *move backward*, inſtead of going forward, which is an Appearance they could not make to us, if we were in the Center of their Motions.

M. I perceive, by conſidering this laſt Scheme, that the Earth being in the Middle, all the other Planets muſt appear to it to move the ſame Way, ſome faſter, ſome ſlower; and never to move backward: But I do not ſo well conceive, in the preſent Caſe, how any of them ſhould ſeem to go backward, while they really move forward.

P. You know the Planets nearer the Sun perform their Revolutions ſooner, on a double Account, both as their Motions are ſwifter, and their Orbits leſs.

M. This you mentioned before.

P. The interior or lower Planets then muſt ſeem, by their ſwifter Revolution, to caſt the exterior Planets behind them, or backward among the fixt Stars.

M. I perceive it now, by looking to the firſt Scheme: And thus *Mars*, *Jupiter*, and *Saturn*, muſt ſeem to us to move back a little among the fixt Stars, as our Earth paſſes betwixt the Sun and them with a quicker Motion.

P. You have it exactly. A Spectator in the higher Planets likewiſe muſt think that the *interior* or lower Planets go backward, or move

The third Conference.

contrary to the Order of the Signs, as they paſs more ſwiftly between the Sun and him.

M. This I apprehend from the former Caſe: If *Venus* paſt between us and the Sun, while *Mercury* moved on the other Side of him, though both proceeded the ſame Way, or followed each other, yet they would ſeem to meet and croſs: Whence *Venus* muſt appear to go backward, or contrary to the other. But is this Obſervation eaſy to be made?

P. So eaſy, that you yourſelf may obſerve it in *Saturn* and *Jupiter* every Year; and in *Mars* and *Venus* once in two Years.

M. I am glad of that methinks: For it ſhews, I take it, both the *Copernican* Order of the Solar Syſtem, and the Motion of the Earth round the Sun, to a Demonſtration.

P. But there is ſtill a *more noble Argument*, *Matho*, which I would chiefly recommend to you, that you may purſue it, when more advanced in theſe Matters; becauſe it illuſtrates and confirms the Order and Motions of the Planets round the Sun, in a Manner altogether particular.

M. Pray inform me what it is?

P. The *Times* of the Revolutions of the Planets round the Sun, and their *Diſtances* from him, are ſo connected by a certain Proportion, which flows from a natural Neceſſity, that one may venture to ſay, it is either Ignorance, or determined Obſtinacy, that makes Men place the Earth in the Center of the Syſtem, ſince ſuch a Diſpoſition would ruin

the moſt beautiful Proportion, and ſtruggles (unſucceſsfully) againſt the ſtrongeſt Neceſſity. The third Conference.

M. I beſeech you tell me what that Proportion is, that I may at leaſt get the Words by heart.

P. It is this, *The Squares of the periodical Times of the Planets round the Sun are always as the Cubes of their Diſtances from him.*

M. I ſhall imagine that this Sentence contains ſome notable Truth, and as ſuch cheriſh it in my Memory.

XXXVII. But what is the Reaſon why theſe Philoſophers aſcribe to the Sun, not only a diurnal, but alſo an annual Motion round the Earth?

P. Juſt what you ſurmiſed lately; a miſtaking the *apparent* for the *true Motion:* For while the Earth is carried round the Sun, the Sun ſeems to move the contrary Way. This Appearance they took to be real Motion in him: As if any one ſhould fancy a *diſtant Tower* to move the contrary Way to that which he himſelf was going, becauſe it ſucceſſively intercepted the View of more remote Objects, in a contrary Order.

M. And yet at this Rate, the Sun, beheld from different Planets, (*Jupiter* and our Earth, for Inſtance,) would appear to move two contrary Ways at once, as the Planets themſelves were carried to oppoſite Sides; which is abſolutely impoſſible.

P. And not only two contrary Ways at once, *Matho*, but (as was obſerved, with Reſpect to the diurnal Motion,) he would ſeem to be carried round the Heavens in very different Times. For a Spectator in any of the Planets would fancy *that Planet* immoveable, and impute both its Motion, and periodical Time to the Sun. Thus, to a Spectator in *Mercury* he ſhould appear to be carried round in three Months; and to another in *Saturn*, ſcarcely in thirty Years.

M. Nothing ſolid can be eſtabliſhed on an Appearance of ſuch an ambiguous, and equivocal Nature as this. But pray let me know how I may obſerve this annual Motion of the Earth; for we are not ſenſible of its moving thus.

P. You have not yet had Time to obſerve the Retrogradation of the Planets, which is one good Way of being ſatisfied of the Reality of the Earth's Motion; as you yourſelf obſerved but a few Minutes ago.

M. Pardon me; I did not reflect on that: But is there no other Way to know it?

P. You know you cannot perceive the Motion of the Earth with your Eyes.

M. That's true: We cannot thus perceive even its diurnal Rotation; but infer it from the Changes it produces round us.

P. It is the ſame here; you can only know the Earth's annual Motion from the Changes which that produces.

M. By what Changes ſhall I know it?

P. By

P. By what Changes do you know one Day from another?

M. It is ſuperfluous to aſk that Queſtion.

P. By what Changes then do you know the following from the former *Year*?

M. Every Year has its own Parts, as much as the Days have theirs.

P. Right; now as the diurnal Motion of the Earth on its Axis makes *Morning*, *Evening*, *Noon*, and *Night*; ſo its annual Revolution round the Sun divides the Year into *Seaſons*, that have ſome Relation to the Parts of the Day, *viz. Spring*, *Summer*, *Autumn*, and *Winter*.

M. Pray do me the Favour to explain to me, how *theſe Changes* are brought about by this Motion of the Earth?

P. The Deduction of this Matter, I'm afraid, will fatigue you; for you muſt attend to a Variety of Circumſtances at once: And after all, the Subject does not afford much Entertainment.

M. Is it not neceſſary to be known?

P. Scarce any Thing can be more ſo.

M. Where then can I better beſtow a little Attention?

P. Since you are ſo reſolved, we muſt go a good Way back: Wherefore tell me, do you know any of the *Conſtellations* in the Heavens by Sight?

M. None, except the *Pleiades*, *Orion*, and the *greater Bear*.

P. Theſe are ſufficient. Have you ever ſeen the Pleiades towards the End of the Spring?

The third Conference.

M. I do not indeed remember, whether I have obſerved them about that Time or not.

P. It was impoſſible you could, *Matho.*

M. Why was it impoſſible?

P. I ſhall tell you; and that ſo much the more eaſily, as you were wont ſometimes in your ſolitary Walks to make a *tour* round the Sun, together with the Earth.

M. I did that in Imagination only.

P. It will be neceſſary to do it in Imagination over again.

M. I ſhall endeavour to follow you.

XXXVIII. *P.* When now the Earth, in its annual Courſe, is got between the Sun and the Pleiades, (for you remember that the fixt Stars are far beyond the Limits of *Saturn*, and ſo at a great Diſtance without the Earth's Orbit;) when, I ſay, the Earth hath got between the Sun and *theſe Stars*, they become obſervable in the Night Time, as not being intercepted from our Sight by the Sun's Rays. And in this Manner they appear during the whole Winter; only they ſeem to get more weſterly every Night, as the Earth moves gradually by them to the Eaſt.

M. This I eaſily conceive: For the Sun and *they* being on oppoſite Sides of the Earth, (or *he* within, and *they* far without its Orbit) when it is Night we are turned towards them, and then they muſt be conſpicuous.

P. As the Spring approaches, the Earth by Degrees withdraws itſelf, from between the

Sun

Sun and them, and moves forward to the oppoſite Part of its Orbit: Whence it comes to paſs that the Sun, placed in the Center, ſeems to draw nearer to the Pleiades; till at length, the Earth thus advancing in its Courſe, the Sun gets between it and the Stars, which then lie hid behind his Rays.

M. This is extremely natural and eaſy to be apprehended.

P. And after the ſame Manner, while the Earth performs its annual Courſe, the Sun, which always ſeems to move the contrary Way, darkens, by his uncontrolable Splendor, the other Conſtellations ſucceſſively: But ſtill the Stars oppoſite to thoſe thus intercepted, (between which, to wit, and the Sun, the Earth paſſes) become conſpicuous to it from behind. Thus from beholding the Heavens in the Night Time, you may diſcover the relative Motion between the Sun and the Earth; and determine the real Motion of the Earth by the Arguments I have given you before.

M. All this I can imagine without Difficulty: The Stars muſt come in View ſucceſſively on the Part of the Earth turned from the Sun, that is, in the Night Time, according as the Earth advances in its Orbit.

P. You are right; for after the Pleiades you will behold the glorious Conſtellation *Orion*, and the *Canicula* or *Procyon*, begin to ſhew themſelves towards the South and Eaſt; and upon the North the *Twins*, *Caſtor* and *Pollux*. As the Year advances, the Conſtellations of

Leo

The third Conference.

Leo and *Hydra* begin to appear. And from the South *Sirius*, the brighteſt of all the Stars, ſhews himſelf blazing fiercely below the Equator; and far behind him, to the Eaſt, the *cæleſtial Virgin* with her *Spica*. Towards the End of Winter, *Arcturus* comes in View, while *Bootes* drives about his *Wain* from the North: At which Time you may perceive almoſt all the Stars of the greateſt Splendor at one View. For *Lyra* and the *Swan*, as alſo *Capella*, *Perſeus*, with the *Gorgon's Head*, and all that beautiful Region, either keep near the Vertex of the Sky, or dip but little under the Horizon.

M. O! what Pleaſure it gives me to hear theſe Things! I ſhall certainly endeavour to obſerve them with Diligence, till I am in ſome Meaſure acquainted with this pleaſant Subject.

P. They will make your Evening Walks agreeable; nor can you procure yourſelf a more refined and innocent Pleaſure: Not to mention how ſtupid it is to neglect ſuch Wonders in the Heavens, as if we were bowed down like the groveling Brutes.

M. Eſpecially when we make ſuch mighty Boaſt of having ſeen this or the other Lord's *fine Houſe*, or *Country-Seat*.

P. If we had a conſtant and uniform *Darkneſs* in the Ether a-Nights, *Matho*; if ſuch a Sight could only be ſeen by going to the Antipodes, or appeared but one Night in an Age, who would not crowd to the Place, or watch for the Time?

M. Men

M. Men would then *crowd*, and *watch*, out of an unmeaning Curioſity: But a rational Spectator is not ſatiated with beholding by Night, and meditating by Day. The third Conference.

P. It is ſo; knowing the *Uſes* and *Ends* of what we behold can only make us put a juſt Value upon them; otherwiſe they cloy and ſatiate, as Baubles do an Infant.

XXXIX. *M.* In the mean Time, I think, I can collect ſomething farther, from what you have ſaid.

P. What is it?

M. Since the Sun appears thus always to move the contrary Way to the Earth; ſince he darkens by his Splendor that Part of the Heavens in which he is ſeen; and ſince the Point of the Heavens oppoſite to the Sun is that which is on our Meridian at Mid-night, as he is at Mid-day, we may know from looking at the Heavens themſelves at that Hour, (Mid-night, to wit), both the Point of the Heavens in which our Earth is, as being then on our Meridian, and the Point in which the Sun then ſeems to be, as being directly oppoſite to the other.

P. You hit the Matter exactly. For if the firſt Degree of *Libra* (that I may ſpeak of Names of which you have not yet heard) be on our Meridian at Mid-night, the Earth, to an Eye placed at the Sun, would appear to be in that Point; whence we know that the Sun is in the oppoſite Point, or in the firſt Degree

The third Conference.

Degree of *Aries*, which happens about the 9th of *March*: And thus they proceed, occupying ſtill oppoſite Points through all the following Signs of the *Zodiack*.

M. Though I am not quite a Stranger to theſe Names, yet pleaſe to make me better acquainted both with the *Names*, and the *Things* they ſignify.

P. That is but reaſonable.——This cœleſtial Globe, you know, repreſents, on its convex Surface, the concave Face of the Heavens. The great Circle here, which cuts the Equator obliquely, having one half of it raiſed to the North, and the other depreſſed towards the South, is called the *Ecliptick*. It is, indeed, the very Orbit of the Earth; but it ſeems to be, and is called the *Way of the Sun*, for a Reaſon already often mentioned; becauſe the Sun ſeems always to move in the oppoſite Point of the Earth's Orbit. It is divided into twelve equal Parts, which are called *Signs*. Theſe are known by the Names of certain living Creatures, which here you perceive painted in Order, *Aries*, *Taurus*, *Gemini*, *&c.*

M. I have obſerved the Names, and Pictures of the Creatures: But why is the Circle itſelf called the *Ecliptick?*

P. Becauſe the Eclipſes of the Sun and Moon happen in, or near it.

M. Does the Sun ever appear to move out of this Circle, which, you ſay, is called the *Way of the Sun?*

P. Never;

The third Conference.

P. Never; but the Moon's Orbit cuts it at a ſmall Angle, whence ſhe moves always a little out of it, except in the Points of Interſection; the Conſideration of which Matter is foreign to our preſent Purpoſe.

M. I have a Notion of the Eclipſe of the Moon, that it happens by her paſſing through the Earth's Shadow, as you ſhewed me before.

P. Well; the Eclipſe of the Sun is occaſioned by the Interpoſition of the dark Body of the Moon, between *him* and us: And as the one happens in, or near the *Full*, ſo the other can only happen in the *Change* of the Moon.

M. I now, indeed, remember, I ſaw a notable Eclipſe of the Sun ſome Time ago; and heard People talking much about it. A ſmall Ring of the Sun's Body ſhone round the Moon; whence, I perceive, he muſt be at leaſt larger than the Moon.

P. And that not a little, if you conſider at what a vaſt Diſtance he is beyond our Satellite.

M. It muſt be ſo. I hope I ſhall ſoon have the Pleaſure of underſtanding theſe Things better.

P. To return; you are chiefly to take Notice of four Points of the Ecliptick, becauſe much depends on the Knowledge of theſe.

M. What are they?

P. The firſt of *Aries* and *Libra*, which are called the *Equinoctial Points*; becauſe when the Sun, or rather the Earth, is in theſe, the Days and Nights are equal to all the Inhabitants of the Globe: And the firſt of *Cancer* and

The third Conference.

and *Capricorn*, which are called the *Solſtitial Points.*

M. I perceive the Points themſelves on the Globe, and think I know the Reaſon why the laſt are called *Solſtitial.*

P. The Reaſon is not hard to be found out.

M. Since the Sun in theſe Points of the Ecliptick is fartheſt diſtant from the Equator, either to the North or South, before he begins to return, he ſeems to ſtand a little, his Motion poſſibly appearing then ſlower.

P. It is ſo indeed. And from his turning back at theſe Points, thoſe two leſſer Circles, parallel to the Equator, are called *Tropicks*; for the Word ſignifies *turning back.* When he comes to the *Tropick of Cancer*, it is our Summer Solſtice; and we have then the longeſt Day, and the ſhorteſt Night: But when he is got down to the *Tropick of Capricorn*, or Winter Solſtice, our Days are ſhorteſt, and Nights longeſt.

M. It is but reaſonable, I perceive, that theſe Points ſhould be chiefly taken Notice of; ſince when the Sun is in theſe, (or rather the Earth, as you obſerved,) he either makes our Days and Nights equal, or gives one of them their greateſt Length; ſo that our moſt remarkable Changes begin from them.

P. The Obſervation is juſt. Laſtly, you perceive here the *Polar Circles*, as far diſtant from their reſpective Poles, as the Ecliptick declines from the Equator, which Diſtance you may yourſelf meaſure on the brazen Meridian.

M. It

M. It ſeems to be about twenty-three Degrees. The third Conference.

P. And almoſt an half.

XL. *M.* Thus far, I think, I underſtand: But how are we to find out in the Heavens themſelves thoſe Signs of the Zodiack, where certainly there are no Effigies of the Creatures, whoſe Names the Signs bear, as on this painted Globe?

P. The *four Points* we have been ſpeaking of are known and determined by aſtronomical Obſervations; and the Degrees are reckoned from the firſt of *Aries* eaſtward, or through the *following Signs* (as they uſed to ſpeak) in every Sign thirty Degrees. Hence the Signs themſelves are known and limited; ſince each of them takes up the twelfth Part of the Ecliptick. And thus it is known what Stars are contained within ſuch a Space, ſo that they can be reduced to their proper Sign, and the Degree of that Sign: And when once a few are known, we come to the Knowledge of the reſt without much Difficulty. As for Example, the *Pleiades* we ſpoke of are in the twenty ſixth Degree of *Aries*, and four Degrees diſtant from the Ecliptick northward. From theſe you will eaſily diſcover both the *Names* and *Places* of the neareſt Stars, and from theſe again others; remembering always to make yourſelf acquainted with the Stars of the greateſt Magnitude firſt, for theſe will direct you beſt.

The third Conference.

beſt. And thus you may make a *Map* as it were of this Part of the Heaven.

M. To that Purpoſe this *artificial Globe*, I preſume, will be of Uſe.

P. Of very great Uſe: For on it you have the Names and Places of the Stars marked according to the lateſt Obſervations.

M. And the *Heavens* and *Globe* are to be conſulted by turns.

P. That will be proper: Only you muſt firſt underſtand ſo to ſet, or rectify the Poſition of the Globe, that it may repreſent the Face of the Heavens at any particular Time. You will alſo eaſily ſee that the Winter Time, and the long and clear Nights, are fitteſt for this Purpoſe: You may then have the Proſpect of the whole Converſion of the Heavens almoſt in one Night. But a Friend will ſhew you more in two or three Evenings, than you could otherwiſe find out by yourſelf in a long Time. After that, a little Practice will make the Thing both eaſy and agreeable. That Seaſon will always return with Pleaſure to you: Every Year will renew your former Acquaintance: You will have a chearful Temper, and find rational Entertainment, while others are eaten up with the Spleen and Vapours.

M. I ſhall long exceedingly for that Seaſon.

P. You will find it more difficult to obſerve the Stars when near the Horizon, than when they are got higher up; for the Air is more groſs and thick, while we direct our View along

along the Surface of the Earth. And for the ſame Reaſon, Stars not far diſtant from each other, when near their greateſt Altitude, ſeem farther ſeparated while they riſe in the Eaſt, or go down on the other Side; which you will obſerve at firſt, not without ſome Surprize. The third Conference.

M. I have, indeed, obſerved a *Tree*, or a *Man*, to appear taller and larger, ſeen through a foggy Air, than when it was perfectly clear.

P. Even when the Air is cleareſt, it is ſtill thicker near the Earth, becauſe of the Vapours conſtantly riſing: And when you look at an Object on the Horizon, the Eye encounters more of this Thickneſs, than by looking higher upward.

M. Poſſibly, it is this Thickneſs of the Air near the Earth, that makes diſtant Mountains appear blueiſh; and, if a great Way off, ſcarce diſtinguiſhable from the *blue Ether*.

P. It is very well obſerved, *Matho*; and this ſhews us that the *Atmoſphere* becomes purer and finer, the higher it riſes. If it were as groſs for forty or fifty Miles ſtraight upward, as for an equal Diſtance outward, or near the Surface of the Ground, we ſhould neither enjoy the Light of the heavenly Bodies ſo pure, nor the Heat of the Sun to ſuch a Degree, as at preſent. The Sun would often appear coloured, with his Edges well defined, the Strength of his Rays being taken off, as ſometimes he appears now when near the Setting.

M. I am glad of having ſtumbled on the Obſervation: What you ſay ſatisfies me, that

The third Conference.

the higher Air becomes ſtill more clear and tranſparent: It muſt have been very uncomfortable, if our Heat and Light had been thus greatly abated. And from this, I think, we may infer, that the Altitude of the Atmoſphere cannot be very great.

P. Indeed, *Matho*, that is uncertain. The Air is a *ſpringy*, or *elaſtick* Fluid: The upper Parts of it, therefore, muſt be at ſuch Diſtance from the Earth, that their Gravitation to it, and Repulſe from the lower Particles, may be *in Equilibrio*. Their Attraction to the Earth can *there* be but very ſmall, and their repelling Force is exceeding great.

M. Leaving that Affair then; in turning round the Globe here, I perceive the ſeveral Signs do not keep within their own Limits.

P. There are ſome Niceties obſerved about the Equinoctial Points, which is not worth your while to dwell upon at firſt.

XLI. *M.* Things then being, I preſume, rightly prepared, pray ſhew me how the great Changes in Nature, and the Diverſity of Seaſons are brought about by the annual Motion of the Earth.

P. In Order to this you muſt imagine yourſelf in good Earneſt to be carried round the Sun, with the Earth, for one whole Revolution.

M. Since you have ſhewed me that we are thus conſtantly carried round him, it is only imagining a real Matter of Fact, drawn into a narrower Compaſs.

P. It

P. It will be proper to begin from the firſt Degree of *Libra:* for the Earth being there, the Sun muſt appear in the firſt Degree of *Aries*; and you may fancy that this is the ninth of *March*, or vernal Equinox. The third Conference.

M. Let us ſet out then.

P. Call to Mind, likewiſe, that the Axis of the Earth points conſtantly to the Pole of the Heaven; that *Point*, namely, which ſeems immoveable in the Earth's diurnal Revolution: For by this Means it happens (becauſe of the immenſe Diſtance of the Heavens) that the Axis keeps ſtill parallel to itſelf.

M. This I do not underſtand; pray explain it a little.

P. I imagine a Diameter drawn through the Earth's Orbit, from North to South, or from the firſt of *Cancer* to the firſt of *Capricorn:* And if the Earth's Axis was produced, when it is in the Extremities of that Dameter, the two *Productions* would meet in the Pole of the Heavens, and with that Diameter form a Triangle: And yet the Axis in both theſe Poſitions ſeems exactly parallel to itſelf.

M. When its Productions make the two Sides of a Triangle?

P. Even in that Caſe.

M. This I cannot comprehend, unleſs I ſhould ſuppoſe theſe two Sides immenſely long, and the Diameter of the Earth's Orbit extremely ſhort, with Reſpect to either of them, or like a Point between them.

P. That is indeed the very Caſe.

The third Conference.

M. Then it ſeems the whole Diameter of the Earth's Orbit is as little, with Reſpect to the Diſtance of the Heavens, as the Semi-diameter of the Earth is, with Reſpect to the Diſtance of the Sun.

P. It is ſo.

M. This is amazing! We can ſcarce form a right Notion of the Diſtance of the Sun, which yet is but as a Point in Compariſon to the other. At that Rate the whole planetary Syſtem muſt be but a ſmall Thing, compared with the ſtupendous Concave of the fixt Stars.

P. Leſs than a *Nut-ſhell*, compared with ſome *ſpacious Dome*.

M. I muſt remember this, and think of it more at Leiſure.——

P. Here likewiſe is an eaſy, intelligible Figure of the whole annual Revolution, which will ſomewhat help your Imagination.

M. I perceive there *Aries* on our Right-hand, and *Libra*, whence we are to ſet out, on our Left: And I fancy we are to move according to the Order of the Signs, or towards *Capricorn*.——

P. Laſtly, remember, that the Earth rolls round on its Axis, or performs the diurnal Revolution, all the Time it is carried round the Sun. For if that larger Globe repreſented the Sun, and this *ſmall one* the Earth, it is as if I carried the little one round the bigger, and at the ſame time turned it on its Axis.

M. I underſtand: But all theſe various Admonitions put me in Mind of *Phœbus*'s tedious Advices

Advices to his Son, before he would permit him to mount the Chariot. The third Conference.

P. We are juſt going to ſtart. But firſt, obſerve how Things are, in the Poſition the Earth is in at preſent: For, becauſe the Equator of the Earth is now exactly oppoſed to the Sun, and he enlightens always a *Hemiſphere*, or half of its Surface, his Rays will reach to both Poles. Whence from the diurnal Revolution of the Earth, the Days and Nights are equal all over the Globe.

M. You told me before, it was ſo at both Equinoxes, and now I perceive the Reaſon of it; we are in the Rays of the Sun for one half the diurnal Revolution, and in the Shadow of the Earth, or Dark, for the other half.

P. It is ſo: Let us now ſet forward; and as we proceed daily with the Earth toward the South, through *Libra*, *Scorpio*, and *Sagittary*, to the Beginning of *Capricorn*, the Sun ſeems to riſe above the Equator, and move to the North, through the oppoſite Signs *Aries*, *Taurus*, and *Gemini*, to the Beginning of *Cancer*.

M. Not ſo faſt. —— The Earth, you ſay, is now on the South Side of the Sun. Why?—becauſe its Axis, always reſpecting the North-Pole of the Heavens, is now more turned to him: Therefore he muſt be on the North of the Earth.

P. So far you are right.

M. And this is the Reaſon why he ſeems to riſe higher to us: For, ſince over our Heads is always *upward* to us, as the Axis (keeping parallel

The third Conference.

rallel to itſelf) turns us more to him, he appears to riſe higher above us. And for the ſame Reaſon, the South-Pole turning from him, he ſeems to fall lower to them.

P. You conceive perfectly well what Effect the Paralleliſm of the Earth's Axis has. Now ſince the Sun began to riſe through the northern Signs; that is, ſince the Earth began to be among the ſouthern Signs, and ſo turned its North-Pole more to the Sun; his Rays fall ſhort of the South-Pole, and reach beyond our North-Pole, and that daily more and more, as the Sun ſeems to riſe higher. Whence it comes to paſs (the Earth ſtill continuing to roll on its Axis) that the Days grow always longer with us in the north Parts of the Earth, and ſhorter to thoſe who live on the other Side the Equator.

M. I underſtand; for now it happens that on this Side of it, the greateſt Part of the diurnal Revolution is performed in the Light of the Sun; but on the other Side, the greateſt Part is performed in the Shadow of the Earth. Whence I ſuppoſe their Nights muſt grow equally long with our Days, and their Days grow ſhort with our Nights.

P. It is, indeed, exactly ſo.——When the Sun has at length reached the Beginning of *Cancer*, and we are come to the firſt of *Capricorn*; that is, when he ſeems to have got to the northmoſt Point, and we are really in the ſouthmoſt Point of the Earth's Orbit, our Days are at the longeſt, and theirs on the other Side the Equator are at the ſhorteſt. *M.* And

M. And how far do the Sun's Rays reach then beyond the North-Pole? The third Conference.

P. Juſt as far as he ſeems to have riſen above the Equator; that is, to the farther Side of the Arctick Circle; and, on the oppoſite Part, they reach only to the nearer Side of the Antarctick Circle. Whence the firſt is all in the Light, and the laſt all in the Earth's Shadow.

M. I ſhould have perceived this, without aſking you the Queſtion. For ſince he always illuminates a Hemiſphere, or half of the Earth's Surface, he muſt ſhine as far beyond the one Pole, as he has advanced nearer it; and as far ſhort of the other, as he has receded from it.

P. And now we are at the Tenth of *June*; for the Earth has performed in the interim about ninety-three Revolutions on its own Axis.

M. Thus far, I think, I conceive perfectly.

P. And now, *Matho*, that we are on the ſouthmoſt Point of the Earth's Orbit, let us imagine that we obſerve the *Altitude* of the Pole, and mark it down.

M. To what Purpoſe?

P. You will ſee immediately.

XLII. Having thus travelled with the Earth through the firſt Quadrant of the Ecliptick; from the Tropick of *Capricorn*, we begin to move eaſtward, through *Aquarius*, and *Piſces*, to the firſt of *Aries*; and the Sun the contrary Way, from the Tropick of *Cancer*, through *Leo*, and *Virgo*, to the firſt of *Libra*.

The third Conference.

M. Let me, if you pleaſe, conſider the Earth's Motion in this Quadrant. ——Its Axis always reſpecting the North, or keeping parallel to itſelf; and the Sun ſeeming to move weſtward, as we advance Eaſtward; the Inclination of the Axis northward will gradually ceaſe to be turned to him: So he muſt loſe of his Altitude, or ſeem to deſcend to the Equator again, by the ſame Degrees as he ſeemed to riſe above it in the former Quadrant.

P. You expreſs the Appearances with much Propriety. And as to the Length of the Days and Nights? ——

M. The Days muſt be ſhortened from the Solſtice to the autumnal Equinox, in the ſame manner as they were lengthened from the vernal Equinox to the Solſtice: For it is eaſily ſeen that the Sun muſt enlighten the Earth in the ſame manner when he returns to the Equator, as when he departed from it.

P. Becauſe in equal Diſtances from the Solſtice the Earth's Axis is equally inclined to the Sun; ſo that its Motion through this Quadrant is only the Converſe of its Motion in the laſt.

M. That makes it ſo eaſy to be apprehended: The only Difficulty is to conceive it in the firſt Quadrant. And now that we are come to the firſt of *Aries*, the Days and Nights muſt be equal again; as when we ſet out from the firſt of *Libra*.

P. One Particular here however is worth your Notice.

M. What

M. What is it?

P. The Arctick Pole hath been in the Light of the Sun, all the Time from the vernal to the autumnal Equinox; that is, all the Time the Sun hath been among the ſix Northern Signs.

M. This is abundantly obvious: For as ſoon as the Earth moved by the firſt of *Libra*, his Rays reached beyond the Pole; nor have they yet left it, when we are got to the Beginning of *Aries*.

P. And the South Pole hath been all the Time in the dark.

M. That is equally plain: But the Sun will make up its Loſſes when he is among the Southern Signs.

P. He will indeed.

M. And hence it follows that at the Poles of the Earth, there is but one Day and one Night in the whole Year.

P. You are ſo ready in theſe Things, *Matho*, that I think we need go no farther in the annual Revolution.

M. By all Means finiſh the Earth's Courſe.—

P. We leave the firſt of *Aries* then on the 12th of *September*, and the Earth begins to move North from the Sun: Our Pole now is turned gradually away from him, becauſe of the conſtant Inclination of the Axis northward, and the South Pole is turned more to him. Whence he ſeems to fall down below the Equator to us, and to riſe higher to thoſe on the other Side of it; for over their Heads is *upward* to them likewiſe. In this Quadrant the

The third Conference.

the Night is lengthened the ſame Way, as the Day was from the oppoſite Equinox, till the Sun arrives at the Beginning of *Capricorn*, by our being carried to the firſt of *Cancer*, which is on the 11th of *December*. And then our Night is become as long as our Day was in the oppoſite Solſtice; and the Day as ſhort as the Night was then.

M. What a beautiful Regularity there is in all this Motion!

P. Being now come to the Northmoſt Point of the Earth's Orbit, let us obſerve the Altitude of the Pole again; and we ſhall not find it raiſed any higher, than in the oppoſite Point; though we have been carried towards it by the whole Length of a Diameter of the *Magnus Orbis*.

M. I ſhall ſurely remember the Obſervation: By it I ſee clearly that *that Diameter*, how long ſoever, is but as a Point compared with the Diſtance of the fixt Stars.——

P. In this Situation of our Globe, Nature ſeems to lour upon us; and we ſuffer in our Turn the Rigours of the hard Seaſon. Our Rivers are frozen over, and the Earth is covered with deep Snow: While on the other Side the Equator Summer reigns, and the wearied Inhabitants ſeek the Shade to ſkreen them from the ſcorching Heat of the Noon-Day Sun.

M. By the ſame wonderful Motion of our Globe, I ſee the Bounty and Smiles of Nature reach all its Inhabitants!

P. From

P. From this chill Solſtice we begin to move South, and the Sun ſeems to return northward; till the Earth, coming again to the firſt of *Libra*, finiſhes its annual Courſe, having in the mean Time performed about 365 Revolutions on its Axis, and thereby divided the Year into as many Days. The third Conference.

XLIII. Now, *Philon*, you have made me Maſter of the Thing I ſo much deſired. The Earth's Motion from South to North of the Sun, with the Paralleliſm of its Axis, are as pleaſant as new to me. Nothing could have given me a clearer View of this *grand Revolution*, unleſs I had been taken up into the Heavens, and beheld the whole annual Courſe from ſome convenient *Station* on high.

P. You are to make the *ſame Tour* then by yourſelf, I ſuppoſe, ſince you are ſo mightily pleaſed with the Speculation.

M. Not once, I aſſure you, nor confined to theſe *little Draughts* on Paper; but under the open Heaven, where I ſhall have Scope. And at no Time of the Year can I thus go round the Zodiack, but I muſt come to the Place where we then really are. There I will ſtop, and conſider the Face of Things in that Poſition of our Globe; and by doing this frequently, the Heavens themſelves will at length become my *Diagram*.

P. This will be an agreeable enough *Paſs-Time*, *Matho*, when you happen to be cloy'd with your other Diverſions, as you own'd was the Caſe ſometimes. *M.* I

The third Conference.

M. I have even been ſometimes ſick of myſelf, *Philon*, having nothing to do that I could take a Pleaſure in: And if that be the *Spleen* or *Vapours* you ſpeak of, it is a bad enough Diſeaſe.

P. So much the worſe, as it beſpeaks a weak and feeble Mind.

M. I am obliged to you for teaching me how to prevent it.—But tell me, what would the Face of Things be, if the Equator and Ecliptick coincided into one?

P. You have already found out Things more difficult than this: Wherefore imagine your Suppoſition to be Reality, and then try to anſwer your own Queſtion.

M. My Lazineſs deſerves a ſeverer Reproof: Pray obſerve then if I can repreſent the Conſequences of ſuch a Caſe juſtly.——The Sun would be conſtantly on the Equator: Therefore there would be a conſtant Equinox, or Equality of Night and Day, all the Earth over: In the ſame Place there could be no Diverſity of Seaſons, becauſe the Sun would ſtill be at the ſame Diſtance from them: And laſtly, we might diſcover the *Limits of the Year*, that is, the End of a Revolution of the Earth round the Sun, by the Stars ſeen in the Night Time, on the Side of the Earth turned from the Sun; but not eaſily by his apparent Motion by Day. And indeed in that Caſe the annual Motion of the Earth round the Sun, would be, I think, almoſt needleſs; ſince we ſhould have the ſame Degree of Heat and Light from him, if the Earth ſtood ſtill in the ſame Part, and revolved

ved on its Axis, as at preſent: Only we could then have but one Face of the Heavens, and the ſame Stars conſtantly expoſed to our View in the Night Time: Which (if you would not think me a little vain) I own I ſhould be ſorry for: And I am ſure the contemplative Part of Mankind would reckon it a prodigious Loſs. The third Conference.

P. You have deduced the Conſequences very juſtly, *Matho:* But what ſhould we gain or loſe by this Change of Conſtitution?

M. We ſhould loſe, I think, a great deal. At the Equator and neighbouring Parts all Things would be violently ſcorched with the Sun conſtantly over their Heads: In theſe Parts where we live, it is to be doubted if we could have any Grain, any Harveſt, or Ripeneſs of Vegetables, having never more Heat than now about the middle of *March:* Elſewhere, eternal Winter, without the Hopes of a returning Spring, would baniſh Mankind from a great Part of the habitable Globe. And certainly it is wonderful that from ſuch a ſmall Obliquity of the Ecliptick, ſo many agreeable Viciſſitudes, and ſuch Advantages to mankind ſhoûld ariſe!

P. Your Reflection is well grounded; and ſo it is for the moſt Part; we do not attend to the Advantages of our preſent Conſtitution, till we conſider fairly the Conſequences that would enſue on a Change.——

M. But what are we to think of the other Planets? Do they enjoy the ſame Viciſſitudes?

P. The

The third Conference.

P. The ſame, or at leaſt not much different: They are dark Bodies like our Earth; have a diurnal Rotation on their own Axes; and are like our Earth, carried round the Sun. Theſe *like Circumſtances* muſt produce the ſame Changes *in Kind*, though perhaps not the ſame *in Degree*. In *Jupiter* and *Mars*, the Ecliptick nearly coincides with the Equator: In *Saturn* theſe two Circles decline farther from each other, than on our Earth. Whence the firſt two Planets have a leſs Difference of Summer and Winter than what we enjoy; but the laſt a greater. And on what Account ſoever we may ſuppoſe a diurnal Revolution to be given to *Jupiter* and *Mars*, there will be ſtill greater Reaſon for allowing it in *Saturn*; if it be at all proper to ſpeak of the Equator of a Planet without ſuch a Revolution.

M. But how ſhould one know theſe Planets from other Stars, ſince they do not keep the ſame Place, but move, as our Earth does, through the conſequent Signs of the Zodiack?

P. That very Circumſtance makes it eaſy to know them. For on a very little Acquaintance with the Heavens, you will be ſurpriſed to find a great Star in any Part of them, which uſes not to be there. You will ſoon become acquainted with their Courſes and Periods, and know in what Part of the Heavens they ought to be found. And if you would have more Exactneſs, you may have recourſe to the aſtronomical Tables: It will give you the greateſt Pleaſure to be able to calculate before

fore hand, where they muſt be at any given Time.

M. You double my Curioſity, by flattering my Hopes ſo agreeably.——But as we have gone through a good many different Subjects in this Conference; if you pleaſe I would retire, and try to recollect them, while they are yet freſh in my Memory.

P. I am ſatisfied, and wiſh you good Succeſs, *Matho:* Theſe Subjects are but dry and un-entertaining.

M. If I can make them plain to myſelf, that will make them pleaſant. Beſides, I think you artfully decried the Deſcription of the annual Motion, that I might be the more ſurpriſed with the Agreeableneſs and Variety of the Things repreſented.

THE

THE
Fourth CONFERENCE.

From the Conſideration of the Beauty *and* Order *of the Planetary Syſtem* Matho *is led to enquire how it began at firſt to be; or who was the* Author *of ſuch a Work? The Reaſons are laid down, by which this may be diſcovered. That the Planets are conſtantly impelled by two diſtinct Forces, without which they could not revolve in Orbits about the Sun: That any Body of itſelf reſiſts to revolve about a Center: That* Gravitation, *and the* Attraction *of* Coheſion, *cannot be the Effects of Matter, or any mechanical Cauſe ſhewn from Variety of Arguments. Hence* Matho *diſcovers that theſe Effects muſt proceed from the immediate Power of the Deity. The* Unity *and* abſolute Perfections *of the Supreme Being deduced in a plain and natural Way.*

The fourth Conference.

XLIV. *P.* SHALL I congratulate *Matho* on his ſafe Return from the ſtarry Regions?

M. You may, if you pleaſe, though I found every Thing ſafe and agreeable there. The *Bull*, the *Scorpion*, the cœleſtial *Archer*, and all the poetical Monſters diſappeared: My only Solicitude was, to conceive rightly the annual and diurnal Motions of the Earth, and

and how theſe occaſion the Viciſſitudes we obſerve in Nature. This I in ſome Sort accompliſhed: But now an Affair of greater Moment takes up my Thoughts. The fourth Conference.

P. What may that be?

M. When I conſider attentively this *vaſt Frame* of the Planets, ſo ſimple in its order, and yet find that this Simplicity is the Source of ſuch Variety, I am perfectly aſtoniſhed. Wherefore let me aſk you, how ſuch a Frame began at firſt to be; or by what Force theſe *prodigious Bodies* are thus conſtantly driven round the Sun, and detained in their Orbits? I find I cannot be eaſy till I know the Cauſe and Origin of theſe Motions.

P. You may aſk what you pleaſe, *Matho*; but I am reſolved to anſwer in my own Way.

M. What is the Meaning of this, *Philon!*

P. The Meaning of it is, that I am not willing to diſappoint you by a plain and ready Anſwer.

M. That Meaning is above my Comprehenſion.

P. The Caſe ſtands thus; a Queſtion of ſuch Importance is not to be anſwered in a Word, like *Facts*, for which no other Reaſon can be given, but that they ſo happen: Here we muſt proceed at Leiſure, that the Truth may rather appear from the Reaſons on which it is founded, than be delivered in bare Words, as when a School-maſter teaches a Child.

M. I remember you told me ſomething like this before, and it is certainly a right Method:

The fourth Conference.

But as it is a long Time ſince you firſt ſaid ſo, pleaſe to tell me now more fully the Reaſons that lead to the true Anſwer of this Queſtion.

P. Even that I am not diſpoſed to do.

M. Then I perceive I can expect but little Satisfaction in a Point, which you yourſelf own to be of the greateſt Importance.

P. You are to proceed thus, *Matho*; tell me frankly what common Senſe ſuggeſts to you concerning the Motions of theſe heavenly Bodies: I ſhall ſurely oppoſe you Tooth and Nail; but do you maintain your own Side of the Queſtion, as far as Reaſon can ſupport you.

M. This is a very unequal Match, and not a great deal to your Credit, I think.

P. The Match, I'm afraid, is not ſo unequal as it would be: However, it will be of ſome Advantage to me, to hear the Sentiments of plain and unbiaſſed Nature, on ſuch a Subject. For it is here, as in Life, we Men live according to the Mode, and argue from Authority: So that though I loſe in the main, I ſhall gain in hearing your natural Sentiments.

M. Without replying to theſe Flouriſhes, I think ſome mighty Force muſt be neceſſary, to put thoſe huge Bodies once in Motion; and then they ſtand in need of a conſtant Direction, otherwiſe they would every Minute leave their Orbits; ſince no Body of itſelf can revolve about another in a free Space.

P. What ſhould hinder it?

M. What ſhould hinder it!——Is it neceſſary that it ſhould of itſelf ſo revolve in a free Space?

P. I do not ſay it is.

M. It is your Buſineſs then, I think, rather to ſhew me what ſhould cauſe it, than mine to ſhew you what ſhould hinder it. For if there be no Cauſe to produce the Effect, though there be nothing to hinder it, the Effect can never be produced: Nor can there be a greater Impediment to any Thing, than the Want of a Cauſe to produce it.

P. It may be ſo.

M. Nay, it cannot be otherwiſe. I perceive, *Philon*, you are endeavouring to puzzle me; but I can maintain this againſt you, or any Body elſe. Beſides, I know from a hundred different Inſtances in my Diverſions, that if I ſtrike a Ball, or any ſuch Thing, it goes ſtraight forward, but never moves in a Circle. I remember nothing that moves in a Circle, except when we drive a Stone round in a Sling; or perhaps when ſome light Body is carried round in a *Whirl* of Water; which certainly is not applicable to the Planets deſcribing circular Orbits in free Spaces.

P. How do you know that the Spaces in which the Planets move are free? They may be full of a ſubtile Matter.

M. Look you, *Philon*, I am yet but a raw Diſputant, and know not all your Arts of diſconcerting People; nor ſhall I ever ſtudy them, ſince I think they only obſtruct the Diſcovery of Truth: But this I know from Experience, that our Earth, for Inſtance, is ſurrounded with no ſuch denſe Matter, as could keep it

The fourth Conference.

within the Limits of its Orbit, which it muſt endeavour conſtantly to break through, by its rapid Motion *. Beſides, ſuppoſing that ſome ſuch impalpable Stuff, as this ſubtile Matter of yours, could drive the Planets round, what, I pray you, muſt drive this Matter round, and every Particle of it? This increaſes the Difficulty. And if you ſhould ſay that this Matter does not move round with the Planet, but ſtands ſtill, it muſt, by its Reſiſtance, ſtop the Motion of the revolving Body, inſtead of keeping it within its Orbit; which increaſes the Difficulty another Way. Nor have I forgot, when I ſay this, what you told me concerning the Atmoſphere's ſurrounding the Earth: But it reaches to no great Height, and partakes as well of the Earth's annual, as diurnal Motion. And its annual Motion remains to be accounted for, as much as the Earth's; ſince its diurnal Motion could not be otherwiſe accounted for, than the Earth's was.

P. Theſe are the Things, *Matho*, which I was deſirous of hearing from yourſelf. You are ſooner and more ſtrongly convinced, by entering into the Diſcuſſion of Particulars, and diſcovering the Reaſons of them yourſelf, than you could have been by hearing the ſame Things from me: And as this is the moſt effectual, ſo it is by far the ſhorteſt Method.

* *Corpora, quæ in vortice delata in orbem redeunt, ejuſdem ſunt denſitatis cum vortice, & eadem lege cum ipſius partibus quoad velocitatem & curſus determinationem moventur.* Prop. 53. Lib. 2. Princip. D. Newton.

M. Tell

M. Tell me then by *what Force*, or the *Direction* of what Cauſe, the Planets thus continue to move round the Sun in circular Orbits?

P. By no Force, and the Direction of no Cauſe at all.

M. And yet I have ſhewn you juſt now, that a Body muſt go ſtraight forward, and cannot move in a Circle, unleſs it be conſtantly kept in, as a Stone is by the Sling.

P. But pray take Care, leſt your Diverſions deceive you in this Point.

M. Which Way?

P. When you throw a Stone ſtraight forward, it doth not move ſtraight forward; but always draws nearer the Earth, and at laſt falls on it.

M. It is ſo, indeed. But hold a little.—— This is excellent! How oft have you told me, that the Action of *falling downward*, is not the Action of the Body itſelf which falls, but the Effect of another Cauſe? This is what I am contending for, and your Inſtance to the contrary makes againſt yourſelf.

P. I ſee you are fluſht with Succeſs, *Matho*: But leaving this Inſtance as we found it, What would you ſay, if I ſhould deny that there was any Cauſe that kept the Stone to a circular Motion, while it is whirled round in the Sling?

M. If you denied ſuch a Cauſe in good Earneſt, I could eaſily convince you, provided you could be convinced by Reaſon.

P. Convince me if you can.

The fourth Conference.

XLV. *M.* I ſhall not ſtay then to obſerve that you ſeem to deny this *Fact* in a very contradictory Manner; but aſk you, if a Stone put into a Sling could move in any Manner without *ſome Hand*?

P. It could not.

M. And then, could it move round in a circular Space, if the Sling did not conſtantly keep it within thoſe Bounds?

P. I cannot tell.

M. Come, ſpeak ingenuouſly, *Philon*: I undertook only to convince you, provided you would ſtand to Reaſon.——For tell me what happens, if you let the String go?

P. The Stone immediately flies out.

M. Doth not, therefore, the String conſtantly impreſs *another Force* upon the Stone, in drawing it ſtill back to the Hand, as it were the *Center* of its Motion?

P. I own it does.

M. The Stone then is conſtantly preſſed, or urged by *two contrary Forces*: By the *one*, it would inceſſantly fly out, this belongs to the Stone itſelf; and by the *other* it is as inceſſantly kept in, this is the Action of the String. Have you any Thing to reply to this?

P. Nothing.

M. There is another Conſideration, likewiſe, that confirms all this, and in which any Boy would be able to give you Satisfaction.

P. Pray let me hear it.

M. If

The fourth Conference.

M. If we whirl round the Stone with more Velocity, it ſometimes happens that the String breaks; which ſhews, that as the circular Motion becomes ſwifter, the *centrifugal Force* (as I now remember you called it before, when ſpeaking of the Ring twirled round on the Table) becomes ſtronger.

P. It does certainly, otherwiſe the String would not break.

M. And muſt not this Increaſe of centrifugal Force require an equal Increaſe of contrary Force to keep the Stone to its Orbit?

P. It muſt. —And now, *Matho*, you have convinced me ſufficiently; but at the ſame Time you have taught me how I may convince you, if you ſhould deny again any of theſe Things, you have juſt now affirmed.

M. That I ſhall be very far from doing: But pray what do you mean by ſuch an Inſinuation?

P. I ſay, that this our Earth, and every one of the Planets, is conſtantly urged or impelled by two contrary Forces; *one* which always drives the Planet ſtraight forward, and *another* which keeps it conſtantly from running out, by retracting it towards the Sun, the *Center* of its Motion. What do you think of this?

M. I think it is eaſier to affirm than to prove it.

P. What do you deny in it?—Well, ſince you ſeem in Doubt what to deny, tell me, Would the Earth placed at this Diſtance from the Sun move any Way without *ſome Hand*;

The fourth Conference.

that is, without a Force impreſſed upon it by *ſome Cauſe?*

M. It would certainly remain there for ever.

P. Would it begin to move forward, think you, or backward? upward or downward?

M. I own it could move no Way, more than the Stone in the Sling.

P. Some HAND, therefore, (whatever that may be) impreſſes *one Force* upon the Earth.

M. I own it.

P. But if only one Force were impreſſed upon it, driving it ſtraight forward, what would happen? Would it keep to a circular Orbit, if another Force did not conſtantly draw it towards the Center?

M. It could not of itſelf keep to a circular Orbit, more than the Stone.

P. For if no other Force acted, what would enſue?

M. It would undoubtedly begin to leave its Orbit that Inſtant.

P. Does not, therefore, ſome HAND inceſſantly impreſs a *ſecond Force*, to prevent—

M. It is enough, *Philon*; I always forget to make the Application from common Inſtances, where our own Experience is Judge, to other Caſes leſs attended to; though the ſame Reaſons are applicable to both: But now I ſee there is an equal Neceſſity for the conſtant Impreſſion of both Forces, as well in the Revolution of ſuch vaſt Bodies as our Earth, as in this ordinary Experiment. And indeed, this is the Notion I myſelf had at firſt; though I did

I did not perceive the two different Forces ſo diſtinctly, nor was I ſo much ſatisfied about the reality of them.

P. For can a Body, the greater it is, require leſs Force to give it any Sort of Motion?

M. It requires a greater, ſurely, and that in Proportion to its Magnitude.

P. Since then a Stone twice as big would require double Force, and one thrice as big triple Force, and ſo on; conſider with yourſelf, how great that Force muſt be, which drives round, and keeps to a circular Motion, ſuch a Body as the Earth, loaded with ſuch vaſt Mountains, and prodigious Rocks, and flying with ſuch Rapidity.

M. Such Force is above our Eſtimation, becauſe we know nothing can be compared with it. Yet I ſhould have ſomewhat a juſter Notion of it, if I knew what the Earth's Velocity in its Orbit were.

P. It would be an eaſy Matter to ſhew you that, if we were certain of its true Diſtance from the Sun. But, as I have ſaid before, that Diſtance is hitherto undetermined.

M. However, ſatisfy my Curioſity ſo far, as to tell me its Velocity, on the common Suppoſition?

P. If the middle Diſtance of the Earth from the Sun be two thouſand of its own Semidiameters, its mean Motion in its annual Orbit is nine hundred and fifty-three *Engliſh* Miles in a Minute: But if its Diſtance be twenty-one thouſand of thoſe Semidiameters (which

The fourth Conference.

(which comes nearer the general Suppoſition) in a Minute of Time it flies full a thouſand Miles.

M. This raiſes my Aſtoniſhment above Expreſſion. If I conſider a prodigious Body, near eight thouſand Miles in Diameter, ſhooting through the Ether at the Rate of ſixty thouſand Miles in an Hour, and that we ourſelves are carried along with it.——But is this to be depended upon?

P. If that be the true Diſtance of the Earth from the Sun (and ſome have made the Diſtance between them much greater) this Velocity of it is as certain, as it is that it moves at all.

M. This looks like the Exaggerations I have heard of in ſome of the *Mahometan* Legends.

P. Thoſe Legends, *Matho*, are only the Productions of an ignorant and irregular Fancy: But alas! the moſt unbounded Fancy is narrow, in Reſpect of the Power of that Cauſe, which we have now under Conſideration.

M. I ſhall not be able, for ſome Time, to get over the Amazement this Particular has thrown me into.

XLVI. *P.* It is proper, before you go farther, to let you know, that the one of theſe Forces, which prevents the Planets from running out in ſtraight Lines, by drawing them conſtantly inward to the Center of their Motion, is called by Philoſophers the *centripetal Force*; and the other, by which they would run out, is called the *excurſory* or *projectile Force*.

M. Theſe

M. Theſe Names expreſs the Difference of the two Forces very clearly. The fourth Conference.

P. As to the Obſervation which you Boys make, that when you whirl the Stone about with more Velocity, its centrifugal Force becomes the greater, it is very much to the Purpoſe: For, as you rightly obſerve, the centripetal Force (or the ſtretching of the String to keep it in) is increaſed equally. Therefore knowing the Quantity (or Strength) of one of theſe Forces, you muſt always know the other; and you will find the Increaſe of the centrifugal Force very regular, according to the Increaſe of Velocity; which may be of great Uſe to you hereafter.

M. I little thought our Diverſions could have been ſo uſeful to us in theſe Matters.

P. As it is of Conſequence to you to be familiarly acquainted with the Neceſſity for theſe Forces, pray anſwer me a few Queſtions.

M. Aſk what you have a Mind.

P. If neither of theſe two Forces were impreſſed upon a Planet, what would follow?

M. Nothing; for the Planet would reſt in the ſame Place, as much as the Stone did in the Sling, when no Hand moved it.

P. If the centripetal Force were only impreſſed, what then would be the Conſequence?

M. The Planet would ſtraightway be drawn down towards the Sun.

P. If only the projectile Force acted?

M. It would run out through the cœleſtial Regions, without Let or Hindrance.

P. If

The fourth Conference.

P. If ſome HAND ſhould impreſs both Forces together, ſo that neither of them could overcome the other, what would be the Effect?

M. The Planet could neither draw nearer the Sun, being hindered by the excurſory Tendency; nor run out to a greater Diſtance from him, being kept in by the centripetal Impreſſion; but muſt neceſſarily revolve in a Circle.

P. But perhaps it is not neceſſary that both Forces ſhould act upon the Planet inceſſantly, and every Moment?

M. It is as neceſſary here as in the Experiment of the Sling: For in the inſtant either of theſe Forces ceaſed to act, one of the two Conſequences juſt now mentioned would follow. Our Earth, for Inſtance, would either be drawn down towards the Sun, or fly out through the cœleſtial Spaces.

P. You ſee then of what Difficulty it is, and what Force it conſtantly requires, to make a Body revolve about a Center in a free Space.

M. I ſee this ſo clearly, that (if the Body be a Planet) I have not Words to expreſs how difficult and wonderful an Effect it is, and what the Force muſt be; ſince any little Pebble, driven round a Center, requires the conſtant Action of an *external Cauſe*, and that acting in two very different Manners. But the more difficult this Effect is, ſo much the more impatient am I to know the Origin of ſuch Force, ſo juſtly applied: I beg therefore you would not keep me any longer in Suſpence.

P. Why

P. Why ſhould you ſtill urge this Queſtion ſo prepoſterouſly, and ſo wide of the Purpoſe? From the very Beginning you muſt know the Cauſe of *Gravity* at all Events: Now you are ſolicitous to know *what Cauſe* ſo conſtantly impreſſes this Force on the Planets. You ſee a prodigious Force is neceſſary; you ſee this prodigious Force is ſupplied, and juſtly impreſſed for attaining the End: And is it not very happy for us that Things are ſo? That *Power* and *Force* are not wanting in Nature, to our comfortable ſubſiſting; though we ſhould neither know *how* nor *whence* they are ſupplied?

M. Why did not you tell me from the Beginning then, *Are we not very happy that all Things are ſo as we ſee them, though we ſhould know nothing farther about them?* There would be a Compend of Knowledge indeed, and an End of Enquiry! Have you not told me that nothing is ſo pleaſant to the rational Nature as the Diſcovery of Truth; nothing more generous than to communicate Knowledge? Is it generous or fair, *Philon*, firſt to raiſe in me a rational Deſire, and then to ſeem to envy me the Gratification of it?

P. That is not the Caſe, I can aſſure you, *Matho:* But ſince you are ſo importunate, we ſhall come to the *Cauſe* immediately; though the longer it had been delayed, it muſt have been diſcovered with the greater Certainty; for which Reaſon I was willing to put it off for ſome Time.

M. As

The fourth Conference.

M. As you have encouraged me to oppoſe and contradict you, you need not fear I ſhould give my Aſſent till I were fully convinced of the Truth of what you advance.

P. To come to the Point then.

XLVII. Tell me, do you remember an Obſervation you made before, when we were ſpeaking of the Figure of the cœleſtial Bodies, from which you inferred that they were all ſpherical?

M. What was it?

P. It was that this Attraction, which obtains through the whole Maſs of our Earth, and belongs to every Particle of it, is no leſs prevalent in all the other Bodies of the Univerſe.

M. I remember it very well, and am ſtill of the ſame Mind, ſince that mutual Tendency, of all the Parts of any Body to each other, muſt naturally bring them into a ſpherical Figure. It is not enough that they come into Contact *any how*, ſo as to form an irregular Figure: They muſt ſtill move to that Point where the ſtronger Force draws them; and thereby form, and tend to a Center. In Fluids this is very plain, let the Body be a hundred or a thouſand Times as big as our Earth, as you then ſhewed me. And in this Caſe we muſt diſtinguiſh, I conceive, between the two Sorts of Attraction, that of *Gravitation*, and that of *Coheſion*. They are quite different Forces, and preſerved diſtinct in their Effects, even when they tend the ſame Way, as you then

then likewiſe explained. It is thus the Particles of Iron, which tend to the Center of the Earth, adhere to other Particles of the Metal in the ſame Direction, by a different Sort of Force: The two Forces, you ſaid, could not have been preſerved more diſtinct, though the Particles had been large enough to admit of Pulleys and Engines to be faſtened to them, and though they had been wrought by the moſt ſkilful Hands. In ſhort, as Gravitation is a Tendency of every Particle of Matter, to be in Contact with every other poſſible Particle, this could never form a *tough*, a *hard*, or a *brittle* Body: Therefore it leaves Matter ſtill in the leaſt poſſible ſeparate Particles, without any particular Degree of Coheſion between neighbouring Particles. It only regards the Figure of the whole Maſs, and as it effects no particular Coheſion between Parts in Contact, it muſt neceſſarily produce Roundneſs of Figure in every Body great or ſmall: And wherever it is otherwiſe, the Effect muſt be hindered by the different Degrees of Coheſion in particular Bodies; as you ſhewed me it was in the Mountains, which are ſupported by hard and unyielding Rocks, that they may keep to that Height ſo neceſſary to a habitable Globe.—— You likewiſe ſhewed me in the moſt convincing Manner, that the ſame Attraction of Gravitation is indiſpenſibly neceſſary to preſerve the great Bodies of the Univerſe in that ſpherical Figure. Without this, Water would not be Water, nor could fluid Bodies conform themſelves

The fourth Conference.

ſelves to a globular Surface, as we ſee they conſtantly do. They might admit of, or remain in any Sort of Figure, how wild or irregular ſoever; or if any Force detached them, they might remain in the ambient Space, without ſeeking back again to their proper Center. Nay, all Matter might thus remain ſcattered and diſſipated in the wide Expanſe.——From theſe Conſiderations, this Attraction of Gravitation ſeems to me the only Power in Nature, adapted to form Matter into ſpherical Bodies; and the neceſſary *Cement*, without which they could not be preſerved in that Figure; and therefore we muſt ſuppoſe that it firſt obtained, and ſtill prevails, through all the Stars of Heaven, as well as between all the Particles of our Earth, or of the other planetary Bodies, which we know to be prodigious Spheres of Matter.

P. I find, *Matho*, you are not idle when abſent: You have greatly improved the ſlender Hints I gave you. Nothing can be more juſtly obſerved, than that the Attraction of Gravitation, ſince it is a Tendency of every Particle to be in Contact with every other poſſible Particle, can effect no particular Degree of Coheſion between the Particles in Contact. Hence this Attraction leaves, as you ſaid, the leaſt poſſible Parts of Matter looſe and ſeparate among themſelves, ſo as to move eaſily one upon another, provided their Diſtance with reſpect to the Center of their Tendency be not changed. We cannot conceive that from this, or from any other uniform Impreſ-

ſion

ſion on the Subſtance of Matter, there ſhould ariſe a *Diverſity*, or *Irregularity* of Figures among the Particles, to hinder their eaſy Motion, or ſliding one upon another. *Irregularity of Figure* proceeds from different Degrees of Force, variouſly impreſſed (or different Degrees of Coheſion) in order to conſtitute different Sorts of Bodies. Thus this Attraction, as you rightly inferred, only regards the Figure of the whole Maſs; and that, one uniform and regular Figure, to wit, the *ſpherical*: Whereas the other Sort of Attraction is conſiſtent with any Sort of Figure, how irregular ſoever. And thus we may be ſatisfied that any Quantity of Matter in theſe Circumſtances, (that is, the moſt fluid poſſible) muſt form one great Body perfectly ſpherical. We muſt likewiſe conceive (according to the Order of Nature) that this Sort of Impreſſion was firſt made upon Matter; and that the particular Attractions, which conſtitute the different Degrees of Coheſion, and form the various Species of Bodies, were ſuperinduced upon it. It was certainly neceſſary, before the particular Sorts of Bodies could be formed out of the common Maſs, that the Particles ſhould all be brought to one Place. And accordingly all the Particles of the ſeveral different Kinds of Bodies which we know, were once in a fluid Form; the Bodies themſelves therefore were formed out of Matter under theſe Circumſtances.

M. This natural Deduction even aſſiſts the Imagination; and the Reaſons aſſigned ſhew to

The fourth Conference.

Satisfaction, that this Attraction firſt formed (as I ſaid before) and ſtill preſerves the ſpherical Figure of all the Stars in Heaven, as well as of all the Bodies in our Solar Syſtem.

P. I am glad you are ſo much Maſter of this Subject: You could not have recollected theſe Particulars, and reaſoned upon them thus at a more proper Time; nor can any Thing be of more Service to you in the Enquiry we are upon at preſent. Wherefore tell me, *Matho*, do you think that this Attraction of Gravitation, by which theſe Bodies ſtill preſerve their ſpherical Figure, obtains or acts only within their Surfaces?

M. This Queſtion, after what has been ſaid, I ſhould think, cannot be difficult: However, let me conſider it, that I may be able to give ſuch an Anſwer as may be ſatisfactory to us both.

XLVIII. Toward the Center of every great Body is *downward* with reſpect to it; from that Center is *upward*: This only happens becauſe of the Attraction or Tendency to that Center from the ambient Space. It is certainly ſo round our Earth: The falling of Rain from the Clouds, and the Deſcent of heavy Bodies projected upward, plainly ſhew it. If Bodies thrown upward were not retracted, the Force of the Projection being ſpent, they would remain ſuſpended on high: Or rather, if there were no Retraction, the Force of the Projection could never be ſpent. It muſt be ſo every where elſe, I conceive, otherwiſe Attraction could

could be of no Uſe to preſerve the ſpherical Figure of thoſe great Bodies: Any Part detached from them would remain for ever afterward ſeparate. If theſe ſpherical Bodies were formed by Attraction at firſt, as we have juſt now ſeen they were, it muſt have been by the ſeparate Particles tending to each other from all the ſurrounding Spaces. Why ſhould not the ſame Attraction prevail ſtill, or be able to act through all the ſame Spaces? Matter cannot be leſs *attracting Matter* now, than it was then. If there were any Quantity of Matter through the whole Solar Syſtem, which was attracted to no Center, it would remain there uſeleſs and unemploy'd. This ſhocks the Notion we have of the Order of Things. It might intercept the Light of the Sun and Stars, and make a Darkneſs and Confuſion in our Syſtem. Such a World as ours requires Tranſparency and Clearneſs: Upon this our Comfort, our Heat and Light depend. How is Tranſparency effected? A ſmall Quantity of Vapours, we find, obſtructs it. Our Atmoſphere is kept pure by the Repellency of its Parts; and yet, through all its Height, it is attracted to the Earth. —— Theſe, *Philon*, are the Thoughts which occur to me on this Subject, with Regard to the ſeveral Particulars we have diſcourſed upon before: And they ſeem to ſhew that Attraction acts all around, without the Surfaces of the great Bodies of Nature.

P. You have touched upon ſome Things, *Matho*, of no ſmall Conſequence: Our At-

The fourth Conference.

moſphere is a Scene of peculiar Wonders. But leaving theſe, you are really of Opinion then, that there is no Space within the Solar Syſtem where Attraction to ſome Center does not prevail?

M. I am: For this Attraction does not (like the other) act in Contact only, but at vaſt Diſtances; of which we have certain Proofs.

P. What Proofs?

M. No Body can be ſo big, ſince all the Parts of Matter in it attract each other, but that many Particles muſt attract one another at the whole Diſtance of its Diameter.

P. But theſe extreme Particles may attract each other, by Means of the intermediate Particles.

M. Since Attraction between any two Particles is not, properly ſpeaking, the Effect of Matter at all, it cannot be the Effect of *intermediate Matter:* And the two Particles muſt affect each other the ſame Way, whether any other Particles lye between them, or not. At this Rate then, ſince, abſolutely ſpeaking, it is poſſible that a Body might be ſo big as to fill the whole Solar Syſtem, we ſee that two Particles of Matter muſt actually attract each other at all that Diſtance.

P. It is ſo indeed.

M. Therefore Attraction not only *may*, but *muſt* act through all that Space. If we ſuppoſe the contrary great Diſorders muſt enſue. If our Earth, for Inſtance, came to a Place where Attraction to no Center prevailed, it is hard to imagine what would be the Conſequence.

P. It

The fourth Conference.

P. It would ſtill attract Bodies to its own Center, even in ſuch a Place.

M. That is true; but being thus deſerted, it would remain there, like a Piece of uſeleſs Lumber: Or, if the projectile Force ſtill acted, it muſt, at leaſt, ramble out for ever through the Spaces on high.

P. What do you ſay, *Matho*; would the Earth be *deſerted*, or at leaſt, *ramble out for ever*, if it came to a Place where Attraction to no Center prevailed? Stop a little, and conſider well the Conſequences of what you are ſaying.—

M. This is an agreeable Surprize, *Philon!* You have brought me to maintain, without my knowing it, the Thing I chiefly wanted to be informed in. This Attraction of Gravitation acts indeed through the whole Syſtem, and is that *mighty Force*, which conſtantly impels the Earth, and all the Planets, towards the Sun, the Center of their Motion; and, together with their projectile Force, maintains their Revolution. It appears to me now ſo natural, that, if there were any Place throughout the Syſtem where Attraction did not obtain, that would be the Region of Diſorder and Confuſion. It is not only the Preſervative of particular Bodies, but the Cement of the whole Planetary World, and I believe, of the whole Univerſe: For Confuſion and Diſorder of uſeleſs and unemploy'd Matter can reign no where in Nature. This likewiſe is that *centripetal Force*, I ſuppoſe, by which our Moon and the other ſecondary Planets are retained in their Orbits

The fourth Conference.

about their Primaries; there being Attraction to the Centers of thoſe *great Bodies*, as well as to that of the Sun.

P. That you may affirm without Heſitation: Every Thing is alike, you perceive, in both Caſes; to the Centers of theſe Planets is *downward*, from a conſiderable Space round them; and the ſecondary Planets obſerve the ſame beautiful Proportion in rolling about them, as they obſerve in rolling about the Sun himſelf.

M. That, namely, between the Squares of their periodical Times, and the Cubes of their Diſtances?

P. The ſame.

M. Well, *Philon*, when ſhall I underſtand this Proportion?

P. Not the ſooner for your Impatience.

M. That is true: However, I now perceive the other Reaſon *why the Sun was to be ſo large a Body*, with Reſpect to the reſt of the Planets; which you before kindly left to my own Diſcovery.

P. Namely?

M. Not only the Heat and Light of the Sun were to be diffuſed all around, as far as the Orbit of Saturn, but his attractive Force was vaſtly to exceed that of all the Planets, that he might not be drawn from the Center of the Syſtem. I am ſatisfied I ſhould not have had half the Pleaſure, if you had told me this, that I now have in finding it out myſelf.

P. For what muſt have happened, if one of the leaſt, inſtead of the greateſt Body, had

had been placed in the Center of the Syſtem? The fourth Conference.

M. It could not at all have been a Syſtem, if the central Body had not Force enough to reſiſt the Attraction of the other revolving Bodies; but muſt inſtantly have gone into Diſorder, and been carried through the cœleſtial Regions with endleſs Confuſion. It is as if we ſhould ſuppoſe a *Mill-Stone* to revolve about ſome *little Pebble*, and not the Pebble about the Mill-Stone.

P. This Reaſon, *Matho*, is according to the Nature of Things: Or, if I might ſo ſay, the Voice of Nature itſelf.

M. And from this View of the Syſtem, I perceive it muſt, indeed, be either Ignorance, or Obſtinacy, to contend that the Earth is in the Center, and that ſuch a Body as the Sun ſhould revolve about it. In that Caſe the Earth would ſoon be dragged from its Place, and together with the reſt of the Planets, follow him through unknown Parts, towards the fixt Stars.

P. You touch upon an univerſal and concluſive Reaſon, for placing the Sun in the Center. All the ancient Aſtronomers, (*Pythagoras* excepted) and ſome of the Moderns likewiſe, in ſettling the Order of the Planetary Syſtem, determined themſelves only by optical Appearances, (concerning which we ſpoke before) without any Regard to phyſical Conſiderations; though the centrifugal Force of Bodies is inſeparable from their moving in circular, or, indeed, any other Sort of Orbits.

The fourth Conference.

M. I thought no other Order of the Syſtem had been pretended, than the *Ptolemæan* and the *Pythagorean*.

P. Tycho Brahe, a noble *Dane*, obſerving that *Venus* and *Mercury* never appear on the Side of the Earth oppoſite to the Sun, contrived a mixt Sort of a Syſtem, where *Venus* and *Mercury* revolve, it is true, immediately about the Sun; but he, with theſe two Planets, revolves about the Earth in the Center.

M. That does not mend the Matter, with Reſpect to the centrifugal Force of ſuch a mighty Body as the Sun, revolving about ſuch a ſmall Body as our Earth: And even thus, I preſume, he could not account naturally for the retrograde Motion of the ſuperior Planets, *Mars*, *Jupiter*, and *Saturn*.

P. He could not.

M. From this I perceive more fully than before, that placing the Sun in the Center, is the only Thing that can ſatisfy both optical Appearances, and phyſical Reaſons.

P. That alone is the Order, with which a fair Enquirer can reſt ſatisfied.——

M. I now likewiſe perceive why, in giving me the Order of the Planets, you reckoned it *upwards* from the Sun to *Saturn*: For though it be *downward* to the Center of every particular Planet from the utmoſt Extent of the Sphere of its Attraction; yet ſince the Sun's attractive Power is predominant over the whole Syſtem, the *upward* and *downward*, with Reſpect to him, muſt extend to its utmoſt Limits.

P. And

P. And a great deal farther too.

M. It is ſomewhat unnatural to ſuppoſe it to end all at once, and at a certain Limit; it muſt rather grow weaker and weaker by Degrees: But pray how much higher does it reach?

P. You muſt be content to be ignorant of that at preſent.

M. Another Difficulty then occurs to me on this Subject: If the Sun's Attraction be predominant over the whole Syſtem, and at the ſame Time every Planet retains a Sphere of Attraction peculiar to itſelf, or where its Force is predominant, how is it that theſe contrary Actions do not diſturb each other?

P. That is not a Point to be diſcuſſed eaſily, or in few Words.

M. I think I could manage it by myſelf.

P. You will certainly underſtand it better, if you try it beforehand.

M. In the mean Time then let us go on with the Subject we were upon before.

XLIX. *P.* You have now diſcovered *one* of the Forces, by which the Planets are governed in their Orbits round the Sun.

M. I have, with much Pleaſure; and could almoſt gueſs at the *Cauſe* which impreſſes this Force ſo powerfully, ſo juſtly, and at ſuch various Diſtances: Though I am not yet quite certain.

P. It is ſomething to know the Nature of the Force itſelf, That it is the ſame which you firſt admired in the Fall of a Stone: For it could

The fourth Conference.

could be ſhewn by an eaſy Computation, that if a Stone were removed to the Diſtance of the Moon from the Earth, it would fall juſt as far in a Minute, by the Force of Gravitation, as the Moon is attracted from her projectile Direction in the ſame Time. And ſince (as I mentioned juſt now) the ſame Proportion obtains in the Motion of the Satellites about their Primaries, and of the primary Planets themſelves about the Sun; we may be certain that the Attraction, which prevails through the whole Syſtem, is the ſame by which a Stone, when thrown up, falls down again to the Earth.

M. I underſtand: You argue from the Stone to the Moon; from the Moon to the reſt of the ſecondary Planets; and from the ſecondary Planets, to the *Primary*; ſhewing the Force ſtill to be of the ſame Kind. So that a Stone gravitates to the Earth, and the Earth itſelf to the Sun, by the ſame Sort of Action.

P. It is ſo: As to the Cauſe both of this and the projectile Force, it will in a little Time become plain. But that you may the better conceive the Uſe and Nature of the projectile Force, anſwer me again a few Queſtions.

M. I am ready, as far as common Senſe can ſuggeſt to me.

P. If *the attractive Force* only prevailed in the Syſtem, what Conſequence would it have?

M. The Sun, as I ſaid before, would draw down all the Planets to himſelf, where they would remain ſtrongly attracted to his Body, without any farther Motion or Order.

P. Which

P. Which Event, *Matho*, would be the final Deſtruction of both the animal and vegetable Nature, in the whole Syſtem; the Earth, and all the other Planets, being conſumed, or quite diſſipated by his raging Fire. The fourth Conference.

M. Dreadful Cataſtrophe! But ſuch an Ocean of Fire was neceſſary, to make our Planetary World habitable.

P. How could this horrible Confuſion have been prevented?

M. It could only have been prevented by a MIGHTY HAND impreſſing on the Planets the other Force, the Projectile, to wit, by which they tend to move on in ſtraight Lines; that by a Compoſition of both Forces they might deſcribe circular Orbits round this Ocean of Fire and Light.

P. Could this Force impreſſed *any how*, and *at a Venture*, have had that Effect?

M. Let me conſider a little—It could not: The Quantity of this Force was to be juſtly attempered to the Sun's Attraction, that it might neither be too weak, nor too ſtrong; but keep the Planets always at the ſame Diſtance. And then this juſt Quantity of the projectile Force was ſkilfully to be directed, for avoiding an equal Inconvenience. Had the Direction been oblique, either *from*, or *to* the Sun, the Planets could not have moved in circular Orbits: Some of them might have aſcended without the Limits of the Syſtem, and others been carried down towards the Sun in the Center.

P. You

The fourth Conference.

P. You are ſatisfied then that *Art* and *Skill* were to be employed in this Matter?

M. Fully.

P. And that doing Things at a Venture might have miſſed of the Effect?

M. It is rather impoſſible that doing Things at a Venture could have reached the Effect, as there is but one Way of hitting the Mark, and ten Thouſand different Ways of miſſing it: And that, whether we conſider the adjuſting the Projectile to the attractive Force in any one Body, or giving it the proper Direction when adjuſted. And much greater is the Difficulty, if we take into the Conſideration all the Bodies of the Syſtem.

P. What you ſay is very true, *Matho*; for as the Sun's attractive Force on every one of the Planets is different, ſo the projectile Force was to be different in each of them: And the ſame attempering the two different Forces, with the Propriety of Direction, was no leſs neceſſary in the Motions of the ſecondary Planets.——Now conſidering theſe two Forces *conſtantly* impreſſed, and alſo the Attraction of Coheſion if you pleaſe, you are ſatisfied that theſe are not the Actions of Matter itſelf?

M. I am, for Reaſons which I have often repeated. A Particle of Matter cannot act ten Thouſand different Ways at once, and at immenſe Diſtances. Nothing can act where it is not. This ſatisfies me as to the Attraction of Gravitation, that it is not the Action of Matter.

As

As to Coheſion, if there were nothing to be overcome but the Inactivity or Inertia of Matter, that Force, which moves and overcomes the Reſiſtance of the whole Body, muſt certainly overcome the Reſiſtance of a ſmall Particle of it, or ſeparate that from the reſt; which yet conſtant Experience ſhews to be otherwiſe. Though this Attraction be only between contiguous Particles, and does not reach to diſtant Parts; ſince a large Bar of Iron is not more hard and firm than a ſmaller Piece; yet we can by no Effort ſeparate thoſe leaſt Parts, or counter-act that Force wherewith they adhere to each other. Hence it is manifeſt that this can leſs be the Effect of theſe little Particles, than Gravitation itſelf. As to the Impreſſion of the projectile Force in the Motion of the Planets round the Sun, it was this which from the beginning I ſaw as much required an external Cauſe, as the Stone in the Sling; or rather infinitely more. It would be ridiculous to ſuppoſe that a ſingle *Mountain*, or but a *Rock*, might of itſelf ſhoot through the Ether, at the Rate of a thouſand Miles a Minute, or even of a hundred; beſides giving itſelf a conſtant Change of Direction.

P. From this you muſt allow, that theſe Actions proceed from the Power of an IMMATERIAL CAUSE.

M. That was the eaſy Diſtinction I gave at firſt; if any Thing is not effected by Matter, it muſt be effected by ſomething *not Matter*.

The fourth Conference.

P. All the Power therefore, which we ſee exerted in the material Univerſe, muſt proceed from an *immaterial Cauſe*.

M. The Connexion between this Propoſition and the laſt is ſo ſtrong, that they ſeem but one and the ſame Thing. If Matter can do nothing, all material Nature muſt conſtantly be influenced, and acted upon by *this Cauſe*.

P. This Cauſe likewiſe muſt not only be poſſeſſed of all the Power we find exerted in the material World, but alſo be *knowing* and *ſkilful*.

M. A Cauſe, which works with Intelligence and Skill, muſt be a *knowing* and *ſkilful Cauſe*.

P. Does this Cauſe only exert its Power by Starts, and in ſome Places, or always and every where?

M. The Effects we have ſeen are *inceſſantly* produced through *all* Nature;——And to ſave you the Trouble of more Queſtions, *Philon*, the Point is now become too plain, for any Perſon not to know that this Cauſe is the *All-powerful* and *infinitely perfect Being*. I had the Deity in my Thoughts ſome Time ago, but imagined you were to tell me of ſome ſecret and unknown Power in *Nature*, which performed all theſe Things; which I believe is the common Way of thinking with regard to this Subject. There is hardly any one who would allow that the Weight of a Stone, or the Hardneſs of Iron, were Effects which required the conſtant Action of the Deity.

P. It is too much the common Way of thinking, *Matho*, even among thoſe who ought

to

to think otherwiſe. If I might complain of the Abuſe to you (whom I would wiſh to have quite a different Way of thinking) it is accounted the great Perfection of Philoſophy, never to come to the *firſt Cauſe* (that is reckoned mean and inartificial) but to hunt after *ſecret* and *hidden Cauſes*, and ſo to explain the Frame of Nature, as if it were ſome Way or other independent and ſelf-ſufficient.

L. On the contrary, we muſt ſoon, very ſoon, come to the *firſt Cauſe*, if we would reaſon right. It is wiſely and kindly ſo ordered that we ſhould eaſily diſcover that *Cauſe*, which is the *End* and the *Reward* of all rational Enquiry. What does all my Study ſignify, if at ſumming up the Account, and after an Application of many Years, it leaves me in Doubt whether I be the Production of *Chance*, without any Deſign, or the Work of an *infinitely wiſe and good Being:* Whether I be deſigned for an endleſs Duration, or ſoon to drop into Non-exiſtence? Application, without this View, ends in the moſt dreadful Uncertainty about ourſelves. It was for this Purpoſe only that the rational Powers of the Soul were given us; that we might diſcover the *Creator* in the Works of Nature. Had we nothing more to regard than the Brutes, the *Back* and *Belly* only, and the ſenſitive Part of our Nature, we ſhould have had no higher Faculties than they. ——But having once diſcovered the *firſt Cauſe*, which (as I have ſaid) we may eaſily do; we may

The fourth Conference.

may then go on with Pleaſure and Security: We may then indulge our Reſearches into the Works of Nature to the laſt; and with greater Alacrity, as being certain that in every Step we advance, we make a new Diſcovery of the Power and Wiſdom of the Author of Nature. It is true, we muſt ſoon be loſt amidſt the Subtilty of Work, and Niceneſs of Contrivance: For a ſmall Knowledge of the Art and Power of the Creator is the Height of all human Attainments here: But even this is pleaſant and comfortable; we know by whom it is we are ſurpaſſed. Whereas, if once we paſs by the obvious Appearances of Nature, endeavouring to find the Cauſes of theſe in more hidden Operations; and the Cauſe of thoſe again, in Things ſtill more abſtruſe; and ſo at length to come to the *firſt Mover* in this Method; we are under a grievous Miſtake. It is as if we ſuppoſed our Faculties, which are over-powered with the Subtilty of Nature's Operations in the ſecond Step, were able to determine with more Clearneſs and Certainty, after they are got down among the inſcrutable *Fineſſes* of the Work. The Deity hath not left himſelf thus to be diſcovered; but hath kindly brought the ſtrongeſt Degree of Evidence, even within the Reach of the Methods of Senſe aſſiſted by Reaſon.

M. You ſeem to ſpeak with ſome Concern, *Philon:* But I perfectly conceive the Reaſonableneſs of what you ſay. Bad indeed would it be for Mankind, if Men of Leiſure and Ge-

nius only could diſcover from the material World, that there was a Deity; and that the heavenly Motions, and the whole Frame of Nature, are ſtill kept in Repair by his Power. Such neceſſary Knowledge was intended to be eaſily attainable.

P. This, *Matho*, was the original Knowledge of Men in their firſt State. But as Diſputes have been raiſed, and thoſe are ſuppoſed to underſtand Things beſt, who ſeem to ſpeak with Doubt and Heſitation, (this having a Shew of greater Knowledge;) I would willingly have put off the Concluſion we are now come to for ſome Time, till we had conſidered the Nature of Matter more carefully, and thereby left leſs Ground for doubting.

M. And for all that I think we have not been raſh, nor concluded any Thing haſtily, or from one Reaſon only: I even fancy I could, in a plain and rude Way, ſatisfy another Perſon, who was deſirous to be informed about theſe Things; though perhaps I could not deal with an unfair and captious Adverſary. However, nothing hinders us from going on with the Conſideration of Matter ſtill: This is agreeable to your own Method; we ſhall go forward with the greater Alacrity, as being certain that in every Step we advance, we ſhall make a nearer Diſcovery of the Power and Wiſdom of the *Author of Nature*.——I began to think, that the Reaſon why you kept me ſo long on the Examination of Things, before we came to this Concluſion, was, That I might

The fourth Conference.

have ſome previous Conception of the Power and Wiſdom of the Deity, from the Greatneſs of the Effects he conſtantly produces: For I find I could not have had ſo full a Notion of theſe, by being ſimply told, *his Perfections were infinite.*

P. That had been a very juſtifiable Reaſon, *Matho*, if I had had it in my View. It is eaſy to pronounce theſe Words, *A Being of infinite Perfections*, and other Expreſſions of this Kind; but we frequently uſe them rather as Words of courſe, mere technical Terms, when we ſpeak of the Deity, than as having any tolerable Notion of what they import. Nor is it eaſy for ſuch Creatures as we are, whoſe firſt Information of Things is from Senſe, to have ſo ſtrong and lively a Conception of infinite Power and Knowledge any other Way, as by contemplating the Effects of theſe Perfections in the viſible Creation.

M. I am convinced that the Method we have taken was the beſt we could have taken. —— But what Ground for doubting have we left?

P. None, I think, to a fair Enquirer: But you muſt not expect always to meet with ſuch. For ſome have denied that the Fabrick of the Univerſe owes it's Origin to Wiſdom and Deſign, or is governed by Power and Knowledge.

M. Muſt not ſuch an artful Contrivance of this Frame, and nice Adjuſtment of one Thing to another, have proceeded from Reaſon and Deſign?

P. They deny it did.

M. What Sort of Effects are thoſe then, which Reaſon and Deſign produce, according to theſe Men?

P. No Sort of Effects at all.

M. How can they who deny this, ſhew that they themſelves are reaſonable Beings?

P. By endeavouring to overturn your Reaſons.

M. Can they ſhew ſuch ſtrong Marks of Reaſon in this Attempt, as thoſe are which they deny to be Marks of Reaſon in the Works of Nature?

P. They themſelves muſt look to that.

M. Do they know all the Inſtances of Art in the Works of Nature?

P. No Man on Earth can pretend to know them, in reſpect of any one Particular: All is Art till our Faculties fail in the Inveſtigation.

M. They cannot therefore be Judges of what they do not underſtand. I remember what you ſaid, when we were ſpeaking of the Uſefulneſs and Neceſſity of Mountains on our Globe. Ignorance only can make a Man find Fault with the Contrivance and Beauty of the Univerſe.

P. There is a pretty famous Story told to this Purpoſe, *Matho*, of a certain King, who, not underſtanding the Order of the Planetary Syſtem, ſaid, Had God conſulted him about the Contrivance, he could have ſhewn how it might have been mended *.

* ——*Il oſa dire* [*Alfonſe dixiẽme Roy de Leon*] *que ſi Dieu Lui eût fait l'honneur de l'y appeller, Il Lui auroit donné des bons conſeils.* Moreri in Alfonſe.

The fourth Conference.

M. Poor Mortal!—As to the Power diſcovered in the Motions of the heavenly Bodies, do *theſe Men* contend that the conſtant Retraction of the Planets towards the Sun, contrary to the Tendency of Bodies revolving about a Center, proceeds from nothing? Do they ſay that the firſt Impreſſion of the projectile Force on ſo many prodigious Globes of ſluggiſh Matter, and the exact Adjuſtment of that Force to balance the conſtant centripetal Tendency, required neither Power nor Art in the *Cauſe?*

P. They aſcribe all thoſe Things to Matter itſelf.

M. Do they aſcribe to Matter thoſe Things, the performing of which it ſtruggles againſt? Matter at Reſt, ſtruggles againſt being put in Motion; when in Motion, it ſtruggles that it may not be turned out of its Direction ſtraight forward: And therefore it cannot perform that, the Performance of which it reſiſts. What do they ſay to this?

P. I do not really know.

M. Could you anſwer any Thing for them?

P. Nothing, indeed, if I ſpeak Senſe: Perhaps they may ſay, that Matter does not reſiſt neceſſarily, and of itſelf, to be put in Motion, or turned out of a ſtraight Direction, when moving.

M. Another Cauſe then, different from Matter, muſt be neceſſary, by whoſe Aſſiſtance Matter might reſiſt; and it would be extremely fooliſh in them, to deny a Cauſe different from

from Matter, and yet have Recourſe by *a Cauſe different from Matter.*

LI. *P.* Now ſtop a little, *Matho*, and conſider what you have done. You will find that you have concluded more in few Words, than I could have ſhewn you by many Arguments.

M. You'll make me vain.

P. Nothing like it: For from the Reſiſtance of Matter, you have ſhewn the *abſolute Neceſſity* of an immaterial Cauſe, let an Adverſary ſay what he will, or be ever ſo unfair and captious. If Matter neceſſarily reſiſts a Change of State, whether of reſt, or moving uniformly forward, an *immaterial Cauſe* muſt be neceſſary to overcome its Reſiſtance: If it doth not of itſelf, and neceſſarily reſiſt, an *Immaterial Cauſe* muſt ſtill be neceſſary, by whoſe Aſſiſtance it may reſiſt.

M. I ſee in either Caſe, the Sluggiſhneſs or *Inertia* of Matter appears undeniable: For if Matter neceſſarily reſiſt a Change of Motion, or of Reſt, it cannot effect that which it reſiſts: And if it reſiſts only by the Help of another Cauſe, it can as little produce the Effect as before, nor even reſiſt producing it, without Aſſiſtance from ſomething elſe. This is making it the moſt impotent Thing we can have any Notion of.

P. We could not form a Notion of any Thing ſo ſluggiſh and impotent, and that on every Suppoſition, unleſs from this very Subſtance. So ſluggiſh, that you may defy the

The fourth Conference.

fierceſt *Sceptick* to doubt of its Inactivity. The Inertia of Matter is one of thoſe Things, which, by being doubted of, forces the Mind to aſſent the contrary Way.

M. Yet from this two-fold Notion of the Inertia of Matter, I perceive that it muſt be good for ſomething, on the firſt Suppoſition; namely, that it neceſſarily reſiſted all Change of its State of Reſt or Motion: But on the laſt Suppoſition, *viz.* that it made no Reſiſtance to a Change of its preſent State, it would be utterly unfit for any Purpoſe in Nature.

P. Pray ſhew me by ſome Example, on what Ground you make this Obſervation.

M. If a Body did not reſiſt to be brought to Reſt, when it is in Motion, it could have no Force, nor produce any Effect. When a Cannon Ball is diſcharged againſt the Wall of a Town, if it made no Reſiſtance to a Change of its State of Motion, it might be ſtopt by the leaſt Force, and would not ſignify ſo much as a Puff of Air.

P. Be a little more particular; would it require any Force at all, leſs or more, to ſtop it?

M. I mean, it would require no Force; otherwiſe it muſt make ſome Reſiſtance, contrary to the Suppoſition.

P. Then all the Force, or Effect, which a Body in Motion has on any other Body, proceeds from its Reſiſtance to change its preſent State?

M. That is, indeed, my Meaning.——And again, if a Body made no Reſiſtance to be put

in

in Motion, the greateſt Body, a *Houſe*, a *Rock*, a *Mountain*, or the *whole Earth*, might be moved with the leaſt Force, or rather with no Force, ſince it could make no Reſiſtance to be moved with any poſſible Celerity.

P. Might not the mutual Coheſion of Parts in a *Rock*, keep it fixt, and immoveable?

M. If they kept the Rock firm in itſelf, the Earth and all muſt be carried along, ſince nothing could make Reſiſtance. But why ſhould the Parts cohere at all? This would be only Reſiſtance to change their State of Reſt among themſelves.

P. That is very true: Go on.——

M. Where would this end then; or what conſiſtent Conſequence could it have? If a Body in Motion came up upon another Body at Reſt, the firſt might be ſtopt by no Force, the ſecond might be moved by no Force, ſince neither could make any Reſiſtance to a Change of its preſent State. Whereupon I aſk you this Queſtion, *Whether would they both move on, or both reſt?*

P. I cannot anſwer it.

M. If the firſt Body were ſtopt, Motion is taken off by nothing; if the ſecond moved along, Motion is excited by nothing. This makes Motion to be *nothing*. A Thing produced by no Cauſe, and put an End to by no Cauſe, muſt be *nothing*, if Language could expreſs ſuch contradictory Notions.

P. I agree with you, *Matho*; the Motion of ſuch unreſiſting Matter (if ſuch Motion be

The fourth Conference.

not contradictory,) muſt be as ineffectual in Nature, and therefore as uſeleſs, as Reſt. Whatever Effect is produced by Matter, is produced by *reſiſting Matter*. The Particles of Light, which are reckoned the moſt ſubtile and active, are yet *reſiſting Matter*; as we may experience by the Heat and Motion they produce in Bodies. The Atheiſt, therefore, by taking away the Reſiſtance of Matter, muſt take away the Uſe both of Matter and Motion in the World; by which notwithſtanding he would have all Things to be performed, and produced, without the Help of a Deity.

M. This Suppoſition alſo takes away, I think, the Nature of Matter itſelf: Otherwiſe, I would aſk this Queſtion; If two equal Bodies, moving with equal Celerity, ſhould meet one another, what muſt the Conſequence of their Meeting be? Could there be any *Shock* between them? Would they ſtop on coming to Contact; or could they bear a Touch?

P. There could be no Shock between them; nor do I ſee that they could bear a Touch, ſince that would ſhew Reſiſtance to a Change of their State of Motion.

M. This makes Body then a mere Shadow, and nothing ſubſtantial.

P. You are certainly in the Right, *Matho:* Matter that could *communicate* no Force, could *bear* no Force; and Matter that could *bear* no Force, would not be ſolid Subſtance, but only the Phantom or Shadow of Matter: Which Concluſion of yours will alſo appear thus. Unreſiſting

reſiſting Matter could not *communicate* Force, nor *bear* Force; nor therefore *withſtand* that conſtant Impreſſion which it receives in Coheſion.

M. I have ſome Notion of this; but pray ſhew me how it is, for I am too impatient to think about it?

P. Suppoſe a Weight ſuſpended by a Wire of Metal, ſo great, that the Wire could ſupport no more without breaking. The Parts in the Thickneſs of this Thread of Metal, through it's whole Length, by their firm Coheſion, reſiſt the whole Force of thirty, or forty, or fifty Pound Weight perhaps, according to the Thickneſs of the Wire: For if in any Part the Reſiſtance were leſs, or the Coheſion leſs ſtrong, the Wire muſt break there, and the Weight fall down.

M. I take it.

P. But the Coheſion of its Parts is not ſtronger now, than when the Wire ſupports no Weight.

M. Certainly it is not; for the Weight doth not increaſe the Strength of the Wire, but only tries it.

P. Every Part then in the Thickneſs of this Wire adheres to the contiguous Part, by a conſtant Impreſſion, equal in Force to the greateſt Weight it could ſuſpend without breaking.

M. I ſee it plainly. Hence it is equally pleaſing and wonderful, to conſider the ſtrong Impreſſion which firm Bodies conſtantly ſuſtain in all their Parts: And ſurely if Matter could

The fourth Conference.

could bear no Force, it could not ſuſtain this conſtant Impreſſion, nor be ſolid Subſtance; but yielding to the Force, or rather before the Force (for it is difficult to expreſs the Caſe conſiſtently,) be at laſt reduced to nothing. I perceive the Anſwer I gave you, with Reſpect to the Coheſion of the Parts of the Rock, was right: If it were unreſiſting Matter (I mean, if that did not imply a Contradiction) its Parts could not bear the Force of the Impreſſion in Coheſion, nor the Force of its own Gravity to the Earth; that is, it could have no Gravity; nor therefore could they make any Reſiſtance to be moved. And the Argument is the ſame in every Part of Matter, between whoſe Particles there is any Degree of Coheſion: And that is, I think, in all Matter.

P. You touch upon another Particular, *Matho*, concerning the Gravity of the Rock, which ſhews us the ſame Truth univerſally. If Matter could bear no Force, it could not gravitate to a Center, nor be weighty; ſince Weight, or Tendency to a Center, you know, ſuppoſes Force impreſſed.

M. I remember it. A Body gravitates no leſs, when ſuſpended in a Balance, or while it is in the Air, than when it lyes on the Ground. And Matter bears this Impreſſion, though it is not in Contact with the Body to which it tends; otherwiſe it would tend to that Body with no Force, or, not tend to it. This, I perceive, would diſſolve the Cement that keeps together the material Univerſe? for *attractive* Force,

Force, *centrifugal* Force, *projectile* Force, would be then impoſſible. The fourth Conference.

P. This alſo is no leſs true in the *Repulſe*, than in the *Attraction* of Matter. When we endeavour to compreſs the Particles of Air, they bear a prodigious Force, without coming into Contact: And the Under-parts of the Atmoſphere ſtill ſupport, after this Manner, the incumbent Weight of the Upper-parts. In ſhort, as it is by Reſiſtance that the Parts of all Bodies, whether *animal*, *vegetable*, or *unvegetating*, act upon one another in all natural Operations; and as it is by Reſiſtance that they could either communicate Force, or bear Force; unreſiſting Matter would not only be of no Uſe in the World, but is a contradictory Notion; ſince the leaſt Force, or rather, indeed, no Force at all, might then conſume, and quite annihilate all the Matter in the Univerſe.

M. I underſtand it fully: This Notion of unreſiſting Matter deſtroys the Subſtance in all Senſes.

LII. And now, *Philon*, from this nearer View of Matter, I ſee, with Pleaſure, that it muſt neceſſarily reſiſt all Change of State, as it is a ſolid and impenetrable Subſtance: And if we do not conceive it as reſiſting a Change of State, we cannot conceive it as ſolid and impenetrable; nor in Truth have any Conception of it at all.

P. Since this is ſo, I hope you are now ſatisfied of a Point, which from the Beginning

The fourth Conference.

ning you allowed to be extremely probable.

M. What was it?

P. That *Change of Place*, *Tendency* to any Side, *Motion* of any Sort, or *Change of Direction* when in Motion, does not belong to Matter, or Body.

M. I am ſo much the more ſatisfied, that Matter can effect none of theſe Changes in itſelf, as it requires a poſitive Force to be impreſſed upon it, in order to overcome the Reſiſtance it makes to the Change.

P. And if it required no Force to be impreſſed upon it, or had not this ſtubborn Inactivity?

M. Then it could be of no Uſe; or it would only be the Phantom of Solidity, and not real Body; more than the Shadow of a Houſe is a Houſe, or the Picture of a Tree is a real Plant. ——And this is what I moſt admire, *Philon*, that the very *Deadneſs* of Matter, or its Reſiſtance to the Performance of any Effect, ſhould be made the Means of its doing all that it performs. This ſeems to me the ſtrongeſt Proof of a *living* and *immaterial Power*, conſtantly working in all Nature, and actuating this Subſtance, that the Heart of Man can conceive or deſire.

P. We ſhall therefore reaſon for the future concerning this Subſtance, with more Security, and leſs Fear of making falſe Concluſions.—— But have you a Notion of any Power beſides a *living* and *immaterial Power*?

M. Since

M. Since what Matter *does*, is only by *reſiſting to do*, there is no Power beſides *immaterial Power:* And no Man can have a Notion of what is not. As to *dead Power*, it is a direct Repugnancy.

P. Can there be Power in Nature, without a *powerful Being* to whom it may belong?

M. Every Perfection, as I apprehend, muſt be the Perfection of *ſome Being:* A Perfection that belonged to *nothing* is again a Repugnancy; no Perfection.

P. Could there be Knowledge in Nature, without an *intelligent Being?*

M. I have told you my Thoughts with reſpect to every Perfection. Knowledge muſt be the Knowledge of ſome Being. There can be no Knowledge in *inert Matter*, or *empty Space:* An intelligent Being therefore muſt be different from theſe.

P. If you add all poſſible Perfections together, could they exiſt without a Being to whom they belonged?

M. If they could not when ſuppoſed ſeparate, they could not when taken all together. They muſt rather belong to a Being as perfect as poſſible.

P. But how do you know that they are conſiſtent, ſo as to belong to the *ſame Being?*

M. I have a Notion that they cannot be inconſiſtent; and yet I cannot give a Reaſon why.

P. Reflect a little, and conſider them as really inconſiſtent.——

M. You

The fourth Conference.

M. You have ſet me right. If Power were inconſiſtent with Knowledge, it would be only *blind Force*, *pure Chance*, or *Temerity*. If Intelligence or Knowledge were inconſiſtent with Power, it would be as uſeleſs in the Univerſe of Things, as a *Surdity of Nature*; ſince however well it might contrive, it could perform nothing. *Power* without Knowledge would be hurtful; and *Knowledge* without Power as unavailing to any Thing elſe, as a *blind* and *unintelligent Nature*; and to the Being itſelf it would even be a Miſery, as ſubjecting it to the cruel Reflections of its own Impotence to act what it ſaw was right.

P. Thus you ſee, if any Perfection were inconſiſtent with another Perfection, it would become an Imperfection on Account of that very Inconſiſtency.

M. So I perceive: An Inconſiſtency with a Thing that is good, muſt be *bad*; and to be inconſiſtent with what is right, muſt be *wrong*.

P. What think you of *Goodneſs*, or *Juſtice* then?

M. Let me conſider; theſe Things are new to me.——Goodneſs, I apprehend, ſuppoſes a *kind Intention*, with Power to make it effectual; that is, it includes the Notion both of Knowledge and Power. Without Power the Intention would be unprofitable; and without Knowledge impoſſible. And if Goodneſs were inconſiſtent with Juſtice, it would only be an Encouragement to Diſorder and Licentiouſneſs. As to Juſtice,——the very Conception of it ſeems

ſeems to include Knowledge, Power and a right Intention. And it is as much Goodneſs or Kindneſs as the Encouragement to Virtue, and Diſcouragement from Vice can be.

P. You are of Opinion then, that each of theſe Perfections includes the reſt, or that any one of them conſiſts of all?

M. You have brought me, by this Sort of reaſoning, to ſee that it muſt be ſo; or that ſo far as it is otherwiſe, they are imperfect, or Perfections in an inferior Degree: For in a ſupreme Degree *any one* naturally ſuppoſes *all the reſt* without Limitation. Only I think Goodneſs and Juſtice reſpect intelligent Beings; whereas Power and Knowledge may regard the material World.

P. Could Power and Wiſdom be manifeſted, think you, to the material Frame of Things, if there were no intelligent Beings in it?

M. It muſt have been inconſiſtent to have deſigned to manifeſt theſe Perfections to mere Matter; ſince Matter is not capable of perceiving the Art and Power manifeſted in itſelf.

P. If Power and Knowledge then were manifeſted in dead Matter, for the ſake of intelligent Beings; they come under the Denomination of *Goodneſs*.

M. This ſhews me indeed the nearer Alliance of theſe Perfections.—But theſe Things, though I begin to find Pleaſure in them, will carry us from our Subject.

P. Let us diverſify the Subject a little; there is Pleaſure in Variety: And we will return

The fourth Conference.

turn to the Conſideration of Matter inſtantly. —Tell me therefore, ſince each of theſe Perfections naturally include the reſt, can any Thing in Nature disjoin *ſuch Perfections*, whoſe Nature it is to be joined together?

M. I am really at a Loſs what to anſwer here.

P. Conſider well what is in Nature; and what is the Nature of theſe Perfections.

M. You have taught me now to conſider Nature, as only conſiſting of *dead Matter* on the one Side, and *Power* and *Knowledge* on the other.—Yes, this ſhews it me indeed. Since it is the Nature of theſe Perfections to be joined together, nothing in Nature can disjoin them. For that Thing, which could disjoin them, muſt be contrary to their Nature. But the Things of a contrary Nature to *Power* and *Knowledge* are only *Impotence* and *Ignorance*, which are mere Negations, or *Nothing*, and can do nothing. Power and Knowledge therefore are neceſſarily united in Nature.

P. And the Things contrary to *Goodneſs* and Juſtice?

M. Are *Malice* and *Tyranny*. But Malice ſuppoſes *Envy* for the Want of Power and Knowledge, to procure ſome Advantage, which the malicious Being is conſcious it has not. And Tyranny ſuppoſes *Fear*, for the ſame Want of Power and Knowledge to ſecure Advantages, which the Being is, or ſuppoſes itſelf to be poſſeſſed of. And Power and Knowledge (the Defect of which gives Riſe to Malice and Tyranny)

ranny) are neceſſarily united to Goodneſs and Juſtice.—

P. You ſeem to be thinking on ſomething farther.

M. By this I ſee, that it is the Sovereign Degree of Power and Knowledge, that is neceſſarily and naturally united to Goodneſs and Juſtice. It is impoſſible that a Being of infinite Power and infinite Knowledge, can ever be malicious or envious, or (therefore) tyrannical; ſince he can ſee nothing but what is below himſelf. But from the Inſtances of Malice and Tyranny I perceive, that a finite Degree of Power and Knowledge may be disjoined from Goodneſs and Juſtice; or it is their being limited, that can only disjoin them from the other two.

P. From what you have ſaid then, it follows, that Malice and Tyranny, (or, in other Words, *Envy* and *Fear*,) have no Foundation in Nature, except a Defect of Power and Knowledge; that is, except the two firſt Negatives, *Ignorance* and *Impotence?*

M. So it ſeems to me.

P. And that the four Perfections we firſt named, viz. *Power*, *Knowledge*, *Juſtice*, and *Goodneſs*, are united by their Nature, provided they be in a ſovereign, or infinite Degree?

M. It is ſo. And ſince nothing can oppoſe their Nature, they are united by the ſtrongeſt Neceſſity I can have any Notion of.

P. But could theſe Perfections have been produced, or have been the Effect of any Cauſe?

The fourth Conference.

M. That ſeems, to me, wildly contradictory.

P. Why ſo?

M. The ſuppoſing them to have been produced, is the ſame Thing as ſuppoſing them once not to have been; and then there could have been nothing to have produced them, except their *Contraries*, which are mere Negations. But it is the greateſt of Contradictions to ſuppoſe, that *Impotence* and *Ignorance* ſhould produce infinite Power and Knowledge. So that they are abſolutely neceſſary in themſelves.——

P. So neceſſary are *Power* and *Knowledge* in Nature, *Matho*, that if we deny their abſolute and inconditionate Neceſſity, we affirm their abſolute impoſſibility; ſince there was nothing in Nature to produce them. This again is another of thoſe Inſtances, where it is impoſſible for the moſt diſingenuous *Sceptick* to doubt, with his utmoſt Effort. They muſt likewiſe be *infinite*, or *unlimited:* For they could not have limited themſelves, or made themſelves leſs Perfections than they *neceſſarily* were. That neceſſary Power and Knowledge ſhould leſſen, or limit themſelves, is both morally and phyſically impoſſible. And there was nothing elſe in Nature to limit or leſſen them: Nature conſiſted of nothing elſe. *Ignorance* and *Impotence* are ſtill *nothing*. Add to this, that it is *ſomething poſitive* that muſt be infinite: And nothing is of ſuch a poſitive Nature as ſuch Perfections, and thoſe *neceſſary*. You ſaw before, that Infinite joined to a Negation

tion (that is, *infinite Nothing*) is abſurd. Infinite Deadneſs, infinite Weakneſs, infinite Ignorance, makes the Perfections, which are thus infinitely denied, again impoſſible.—— Laſtly, they muſt be undivided as well as unlimited, for the ſame Reaſons, which it is almoſt needleſs to repeat. Diviſion is Limitation. It is their Nature to be united. They could not have divided themſelves. Infinite Power, or infinite Knowledge, could not have divided, and thereby leſſened itſelf: This is again both morally and phyſically impoſſible. And as there was nothing elſe in Nature, (for they make all Nature, if I may ſo expreſs it;) they could not have been divided: We muſt ſtill remember, that their Contraries are nothing, and could not make a Part of Nature. ——Thus we have helped each other, *Matho*, to ſuch a View of the *Unity* and *abſolute Perfections* of the SUPREME BEING, as your mentioning *living* and *immaterial Power*, in oppoſition to the Deadneſs of Matter, laid in our Way.

M. When one conſiders the neceſſary Nature of theſe Perfections, all Things in Nature elſe ſeem little and tranſitory, and almoſt to diſappear. It is really a noble Speculation! and no leſs comfortable than pleaſant, to find an *Infinity* of Power, and Knowledge, and Goodneſs, and Juſtice, abſolutely neceſſary.

P. Virtue muſt triumph at laſt. The good Man has ſo little Reaſon to doubt, that he is not ſurer of what he is poſſeſſed of, than he is

The fourth Conference.

of immortal Happineſs: But I mention theſe Things a little prepoſterouſly to you now.

M. No; I underſtand them well, and ſhall often think on what you ſay.

P. Try the Reaſons when you are merry or ſad, in Health or Sickneſs, at Death itſelf; you will ſtill find them hold.

M. Though this has been a ſevere Bout to me, I am extremely glad we entered on the Subject.

LIII. And here, I obſerve, that this Sort of Proof for the Being of a Deity, though abſtracted, as indeed it ought to be, ſeems very natural. For as his Exiſtence is abſolutely neceſſary, and independent of any Thing elſe, ſo there muſt be a Reaſon for it, (or rather, the Reaſon of it muſt be) independent from any Conſideration of the material World.

P. The Obſervation is juſt; and ſuch a Proof muſt of Conſequence be abſtracted, as having nothing to do with the material Nature. It is ſuch a Proof as would conclude, before Matter exiſted, or after it ceaſed to be: And it would be hard to affirm, that the Reaſon for the Being of a God ſhould diſappear with the material Univerſe. However, it is wiſely ordered, (as we obſerved before) that the ſtrongeſt Degree of Certainty is brought down even to the Methods of Senſe: And it muſt be owned, though we may infer in an abſtracted Manner, that the Power and Wiſdom of the Deity are neceſſary and infinite; yet without

the

the Wonders manifeſted in the Creation, we could not have ſuch ſtrong and lively Conceptions of theſe Perfections: Beſides, the pleaſing Circumſtance of conſidering the Deity in the Relation of our Creator; and beholding conſtantly the Operations of his Power and Goodneſs.—

M. To return then, ſince the Exiſtence of a Deity is ſo many Ways undeniable, and his Power ſo viſible, what Reaſons do the Atheiſts give for ſaying, that Matter and Motion may do all that is done in Nature?

P. I put the Queſtion to you again, *Matho:* Do you think there could be any Reaſons for ſuch an abſurd Opinion?

M. I am ſatisfied there could be none ſolid.

P. Do you think they could even appear probable to an impartial Enquirer?

M. That I cannot tell, unleſs I knew them. It is hard to conceive what Men could mean, unleſs they had ſome Shadow of Reaſon, whereby they deceived themſelves at leaſt.

P. And notwithſtanding, you brought the Point between you and them ſoon to a Deciſion.

M. Yes, with Reſpect to the Motion of the heavenly Bodies.

P. You have ſeen that Matter reſiſts all Change of State, and therefore it reſiſts to be put in Motion.

M. How then do they account for its being put in Motion?

P. In truth, *Matho*, what they ſay is ſo ſilly, that, if I ſhould take their Side of the

The fourth Conference.

Queſtion, you would ſuſpect I wronged their Arguments. They ſay, *Matter was eternally falling downward, through the infinite Abyſs of Space; but that having ſome how or other a Side-Motion, its Parts came to touch, and ſo formed a World.* How does this pleaſe you?

M. It is quite below Contempt. I am a thouſand times more ſurprized than I was, that ever there ſhould be an Atheiſt in the World.

P. Let them ſay then what they will, as long as they deny an intelligent and powerful Government in Nature; I ſhould expect now, that you could ſhew the Abſurdity of what they advance. And pray, though we ſhould allow that Motion were thus natural to Matter, would it not be as much a dead Subſtance, as if it had been without Motion from Eternity?

M. It certainly would; for Matter at preſent is as much a dead unactive Subſtance in all the Changes it undergoes, as if it remained ſtill in the ſame State: And this proves to me that though ſuch Motion were natural to it, nothing could be effected, unleſs this Motion were over-ruled by *Intelligence* and a *governing Mind.*

P. Your Reaſons for ſaying ſo?

M. It is almoſt a Shame to argue againſt the Atheiſt's Suppoſition. If Matter had naturally ſuch a Tendency, it muſt ſtill fall down through the Immenſity of Space, as well when in Contact, as in ſeparate Particles, without ever producing any Thing. And this ſhews

us

The fourth Conference.

us again, in a very particular Manner, the Abſurdity of an *univerſal downward*, or that Gravity was a connate and inherent Property of Matter. But let us even ſuppoſe that a mutual Attraction between all its Parts, ſuch as we took Notice of before, were eſſential to Matter; or that its Particles could act where they are not, and that to all Diſtances: This could only bring the whole Subſtance into one prodigious Heap, which muſt afterwards remain without Change or Motion of its Parts. And we ſee before too that to prevent the great Bodies of Nature from coming thus together, they are made to move in circular Orbits, whereby a centrifugal Force is excited in them.

P. Suppoſe once for all, that every Sort of Motion, backward and forward, circular and rectilinear, were natural to the Particles of Matter; and then conſider whether they could produce a World.

M. Are you able to make ſuch a Suppoſition as this, *Philon?* I thought I had gone Lengths enough. It is abſurd to ſuppoſe ſo many Contradictions, in order to try the Truth of any Thing, ſince one Contradiction muſt ſhew it falſe. It is to bid me conſider whether the Atheiſt's Scheme would be poſſible, if it were three or four Times impoſſible. It was probably by conſidering Things in this confuſed Way, that the Atheiſt at firſt bewildered himſelf; and that other Mens Eyes have been dazzled. Matter reſiſts to be put in Mo-

The fourth Conference.

tion, and when put in Motion, it reſiſts a Change of Direction. Thus if the Particles moved all one Way in this ſtraight-lined Motion, we have ſeen that nothing could be effected. If they all moved contrary Ways when they encountered, the ſtronger muſt carry the weaker along with them; or if the contrary Forces were equal, both muſt reſt. And what agrees to two Particles agrees to the whole Maſs. Some Parts of Matter might ſtill move farther aſunder through the infinite Space; and the Motion in others being deſtroyed, they muſt remain eternally at Reſt.

P. You reaſon perfectly well, *Matho*; the Quantity of Motion once loſt, could never after be recovered on this Hypotheſis; nor indeed on any Hypotheſis, except by *immaterial Power*. It is thus the Quantity of it, which is ſtill decreaſing by the Action of Matter upon Matter, is conſtantly renewed by the firſt Cauſe. Let the Motions of the Particles therefore be ever ſo various and irregular, when contrary they muſt deſtroy one another, and the Particles after that reſt; otherwiſe the Atheiſt might ſuppoſe his Matter in a State of Reſt at firſt, and then to impreſs Motion on itſelf. And after all, nothing could be produced on theſe Suppoſitions, but Motion by ſtraight Lines or endleſs Reſt. Much more might be added if it were neceſſary. Though he ſhould imagine the Particles to ramble backward and forward, like *Gnats* flying in the Air in a Summer-Evening, this could never

ver produce *Coheſion of Parts*, *Order* or *Arrangement*: Matter agitated by ſo many wild and tumultuous Motions, would only ſo much the more ſtand in need of *a powerful* and *intelligent Cauſe*, to reſtrain *theſe*, and impreſs other Motions conſiſtent with ſome regular Deſign. The fourth Conference.

M. I underſtand the Caſe as you expreſſed it in all its Perplexity. The more they multiply theſe blind and unguided Motions, the more they make an *intelligent Principle* neceſſary, to over-rule and direct them: Since Matter, toſſed in ſuch a wild Manner, muſt be more unmanageable, than when at perfect Reſt.——But as there is no Pleaſure in purſuing theſe Abſurdities any farther, and as we have not yet ſpoke of the *Coheſion of Parts* in Matter, otherwiſe than as it came in our Way accidentally; pray reſume that Subject a little.

LIV. *P.* Tell me then; Muſt not any Particle of Matter, the leſs it is, yield to the leſs Force impelling it?

M. Without all Doubt; and the greater it is it muſt require the more Force to be moved with the ſame Celerity.

P. Could a Particle reſiſt a hundred or a thouſand Times a greater Force than that is to which it yields?

M. That is plainly repugnant; or it is ſaying, *the Particle can do more than it can do.*

P. And is not the ſame Thing true of any other equal Particle?

The fourth Conference.

M. It is as true of the ſecond as of the firſt, and of the third as of the ſecond, and ſo on, for any Number of equal Particles

P. Let us ſuppoſe then that a Bit of Iron conſiſted of three or four ſuch Particles; and do you think that theſe Particles could be ſeparated from each other, by the ſame Force by which they could be moved if they were ſeparated?

M. No; not by a thouſand Times a greater.

P. Is this thouſand fold Reſiſtance made by the Particle itſelf?

M. Certainly it is not; for that would be to affirm that it made a thouſand Times a greater Reſiſtance than it can make; a ridiculous Contradiction.

P. Whence does this Exceſs of nine hundred and ninety nine Times a greater Reſiſtance than the Particles can make, proceed then?

M. This diſtinct Manner of arguing, *Philon*, ſhews me undeniably, that ſuch a prodigious Exceſs of Reſiſtance is the immediate Effect of immaterial Power. But is any Thing offered here with a View to account for this wonderful Effect otherwiſe? I ſhould think that Men muſt have inſtantly owned the Hand of the Deity in ſuch a plain Caſe.

P. It hath been ſuppoſed that ſuch little Particles are joined together by certain other leſs Particles, in the Form of *Hooks* or *Claſps*, which keep them fixt together.

M. They

M. They ſhould have ſuppoſed then, that the whole Subſtance of Iron, or other ſuch hard Bodies, conſiſted only of theſe *Claſps* or *Hooks*: For ſuch Bodies make equal Reſiſtance every Way, to be divided, or have their Parts ſeparated. Beſides, muſt not ſuch *Claſps* be leſs than the Parts they clapſed together? The fourth Conference.

P. We can hardly conceive it otherwiſe.

M. And muſt not the *Parts* of theſe Claſps be leſs than the Claſps themſelves?

P. Without Doubt.

M. What then claſps together the Parts of theſe little Machines?

P. That I cannot tell.

M. This leaves the Point unſolved, or rather makes the Difficulty greater: Since (as we obſerv'd juſt now) any Particle, the leſs it is, muſt yield to the leſs Force impelling it. And here the direct contrary is ſuppoſed.

P. Such Suppoſitions, *Matho*, (that I may acquaint you with this by the Way) are frequent in the mechanical Explications of the Appearances in Nature.

M. What do you call *mechanical Explications*?

P. That is called a mechanical Explication when the Effects, which appear in Matter, are ſaid to be produced by other Matter, of which the preſent Caſe is an Inſtance.

M. I underſtand; when the Matter of the Body is allowed unable to produce the Effect, other Matter is ſuppoſed ſufficient.

P. That

The fourth Conference.

P. That is it.

M. I ſhould make no ſcruple to reject ſuch Explications, eſpecially where the greateſt Efficacy is aſcribed to the leaſt Particles, which certainly have the leaſt *Reſiſtance*, by which only they can effect any Thing. And the preſent Explication of the ſtrong Coheſion between the Parts of Bodies only ſuppoſes that it is the Effect of the ſtronger Coheſion of leſſer Parts!

P. Some have endeavoured to explain the Coheſion of the Parts of Bodies, by the Preſſure of ſuperincumbent ſubtile Matter; for which ſome Experiments are alledged.

M. Does not this Matter preſs upon all Bodies equally?

P. Without Doubt.

M. Then the Parts of all Bodies ſhould adhere to each other with equal Force; and it would be as difficult to break a Piece of Glaſs, as a Plate of Iron. Beſides, how could this Matter get in, to cauſe Coheſion between every Part of the hardeſt Bodies? By pervading them all poſſible Ways, it ſhould rather looſe the Coheſion, and diſſolve the Body.

P. A great Philoſopher was of Opinion, that *Reſt* only cauſed Coheſion between the Parts of Bodies.

M. How many Degrees of Reſt are here? The Degrees of Coheſion ſeem innumerable. Reſt between the Parts ſeems rather the Conſequence than the Cauſe of Coheſion. And if

I can

I can overcome the Reſiſtance of the whole Body, by putting it in Motion; why ſhould I not be able to overcome the Reſiſtance of a Part of it ſeparately? The fourth Conference.

P. There are other Explications of this Appearance, but not worth mentioning.

M. And from thoſe you have mentioned, I am ſtill more ſatisfied, that the ſtrong Impreſſion conſtantly made on the Parts of firm Bodies, which you ſhewed me from the Inſtance of the Wire ſuſpending a Weight, cannot be the Effect of a material Cauſe. A ſmall Bit of Iron could bear an inconceivable Preſſure, before it could be flatted, or the Parts of it ſeparated from that Contact they are in with others; and yet the natural Reſiſtance of the whole Piece, proceeding from its Inertia or Deadneſs, might be overcome by the Strength of an Hair.

P. You are likewiſe ſatisfied that this Impreſſion muſt be conſtant.

M. As much as I am, that the Strength and Firmneſs of theſe Bodies, which ſupport the largeſt Edifices, and bear the greateſt Weights, muſt be conſtant. *The Weight does not increaſe but try the Strength of ſuch Bodies.* If it were otherwiſe, the ſtatelieſt Piles of Building muſt inſtantly tumble; and the Bodies of Animals be looſened into Atoms. Nothing in Nature could remain the ſame; nothing could bear to *touch* or to be *touched.* I need not mention what occurs to me every Time I think on this Subject; That if this Impreſſion

The fourth Conference.

were not *various* to conſtitute the different Species of Bodies, if all were as hard as Iron, or as ſoft as Wax; if all were equally brittle, or equally tough and ſupple; the Fitneſs of one Thing to another, and the Uſe of all, would be loſt in Nature. Theſe Things fill the Mind with Amazement, which is ever new.

P. You ſaid, without this conſtant Impreſſion, the Bodies of Animals muſt inſtantly be looſened into Atoms.

M. Certainly. Every Bone in our Body bears a conſtant Impreſſion of Force, equal to the greateſt Reſiſtance it could make, before it were broken. And this, indeed, is aſtoniſhing, (for you make me attend to it,) that our Bodies conſtantly bear an Impreſſion, which, one Way applied, would cruſh and diſſolve them; and another Way applied, is not only not felt, but preſerves us! Beſides, there is almoſt all the Difference of Impreſſions in the animal Body alone: The Bones are hard, the Fleſh ſoft, the Sinews tough, the Blood looſe and fluid.

P. The more we think on theſe Things, *Matho*, the more various we muſt ſee our immediate Dependence on the Power of the Deity to be.

LV. *M.* There is ſtill another Particular in the Coheſion of the Parts of Bodies, which ſeems to me exceeding wonderful.

P. What is it?

M. Though the Variety of this Action, and the

the different Force of the Impreſſion in different Sorts of Bodies, is beyond our Conception; yet if we might compare Things which we do not comprehend, one with another, the Subtilty of the Action appears ſtill more aſtoniſhing.

P. I ſhould be glad to hear your Thoughts on this Head.

M. We obſerved from the Beginning, that Coheſion is only between the contiguous Parts; the whole Force of the Action, therefore, is only between theſe: But they are the leaſt Parts of Matter which can be contiguous to each other, ſince Matter can only come to Contact by its Surface, and not by its Depth or Solidity. So that, I think, they are only the Surfaces of the leaſt Parts, that make all the Reſiſtance, even in the very hardeſt Bodies, as *Steel* or *Adamant*. So far I ſhould have a clear Conception: But if I conſider theſe Surfaces, as not the Solidity of the Parts, but that theſe Parts muſt have other Parts; the Subtilty of this ſtrong Action, which effects Coheſion among the Parts, exceeds my Imagination. For I can conceive no Part of Matter ſo little, but what might afford Room for a Separation, or for two new Surfaces to be made out of it. This multiplies the Action to a Minuteneſs that ſurpaſſes my Faculties, (as I ſaid,) and yet without diminiſhing the Strength of it.

P. Here, I believe, every Body's Faculties muſt fail them, *Matho*, as well as yours. What you have ſaid, ſeems very juſt; and, beſides

The fourth Conference.

what you intended, it ſhews us a new Reaſon, why this ſtrong and ſubtile Action could neither be the Effect of other Matter, nor of theſe little Particles themſelves.

M. That I had in View, when you told me of the *Preſſure of a ſuperincumbent ſubtile Matter*. It is ſtrangely contrary to Reaſon, to ſuppoſe, that ſuch minute Particles ſhould be ſo impelled by other Matter, as to exert ſuch an Effort. Thoſe ſmall Atoms could not afford *Room*, *Scope*, or *Surface* enough, for other Particles to act upon them: And then the Impulſe of other Matter could never explain, but muſt perplex this Affair beyond Conception. If other Matter impelled a Particle on all Sides equally, the contrary Actions ſuſpending each other, that would diſſolve its Coheſion with any other Particle. If the Particle were impelled more ſtrongly on one Side, that muſt looſe it on the other. Laſtly, there ſhould be more of this *other Matter*, I think, in the very hardeſt Bodies, than of their own proper Matter; ſince every Atom of them would want to be impelled on all Sides. This would be a ſtrange round about Suppoſition, made to ſhew the Coheſion of the Parts in Bodies impoſſible: And the Coheſion of theſe other Particles is ſtill left unaccounted for; as alſo how they come to have this Motion and Direction, ſo as to impel conſtantly all the Parts of all Bodies.

P. Beſides, *Matho*, ſince the Force, wherewith every little Particle attracts the contiguous Particles,

Particles, acts on all Sides, and every where round; and ſince no Particle can have oppoſite Tendencies, or a Tendency, to all contrary Sides at once; it is plain that Coheſion can neither be the Effect of any other Matter from without, nor of theſe Particles themſelves from within; but *the conſtant Impreſſion of a ſuperior and Divine Power*, exerted in a Manner by us altogether inconceivable.

M. I underſtand what you ſay: A Particle could no more have a Tendency to all Sides at once, than it could move to all Sides at once: And a Tendency to one Side could never cauſe Coheſion, even on that Side. It is delightful to ſee a Point, which carries ſuch important Conſequences along with it, admit of ſo clear a Deciſion.

P. Finally, *Matho*, if we conſider what you expreſſed ſo well in the Beginning, when you ſaid, that the Minuteneſs of the Action ſurpaſſed your Faculties: If we conſider, I ſay, that there is no Particle of Matter ſo little, ſince it is a Thing ſolidly extended into Length, Breadth, and Thickneſs, which doth not conſiſt of other leſs Parts, and theſe of others, till we are quite loſt in the Conception; we muſt own that this ſubtile Action of Coheſion deſcends ſtill with undiminiſhed Force: So that the very ſolid Extenſion of Matter, that is, the very Exiſtence of it, is the indefinent Effect of *Divine Power*.

M. O *Philon!* the wonderful Action! I ſee almoſt with my Eyes, that the conſtant Exer-

The fourth Conference.

tion of the Power of the Deity is the very *Baſis* (if I might ſo ſpeak,) of the Exiſtence of Matter. I now ſee, what great Reaſon you had for ſaying, at the Beginning of our ſecond Conference, that no Man ever had, nor ever will have, a Notion of the Subſtance of Matter, otherwiſe than as the Power of the Deity is conſtantly exerted upon it; or rather, *exerted in it.*

LVI. *P.* If you reflect a little, you will perceive the other Sort of Attraction no leſs wonderful in ſeveral Reſpects.

M. I find it difficult to recall my Thoughts ſo ſoon, to the Conſideration of another Subject.

P. As the Attraction of Coheſion ſhews the various and inconceivable Power of the Deity, wherever Matter is; ſo the Attraction of Gravitation ſhews the ſame Power no leſs various and inconceivable, even where it is not.

M. Make this a little plainer.

P. You inferred rightly before, that the Attraction of Gravitation muſt prevail through the whole Planetary Syſtem, becauſe if our Earth (or any of the Planets) came to a Place where there was Attraction to no Center, its Courſe would be diſturbed, or it would ſeem to be deſerted. You obſerved, that ſuch a World as this required Tranſparency and Clearneſs, that the Light might not be intercepted, nor the celeſtial Bodies darkened, by Matter lying ſcattered at Random, or uſeleſs and unimployed in the Syſtem. Hence you concluded

ed that this Attraction of Gravitation was not only the Cement of particular Bodies, but of the whole Univerſe. The fourth Conference.

M. I ſee it muſt be ſo indeed; the Action muſt be propagated through the whole intermediate Space. This is aſtoniſhing; and I ought to have ſeen it before.

P. There is a Particular here which makes it ſtill more aſtoniſhing, though you cannot yet underſtand it: For the Intenſity of the Action is different at every different Diſtance, through the whole Space lying between the attracting Bodies.

M. I remember you ſaid, the Attraction of the Sun on each of the Planets was different, which required a different Degree of projectile Force to be impreſſed on every one of them.

P. Conſider then *any one Particle* of dead Matter in the planetary World, as attracting *every other Particle*; and endeavour to conceive in your Mind how various and wonderful the Action of *this one Particle*, or the Power exerted with reſpect to it, muſt be.

M. Alas, *Philon!* This confounds the Force of Imagination a thouſand Times. A ſmall Part of ſuch Diverſity would be more admired, becauſe better underſtood. I now ſee that the Multiplicity of the Action as much overpowers our Faculties in this Caſe, as the Subtility of it did in the former. But indeed one's Amazement is divided; and which ever of the two any one conſiders at the Time, he muſt

The fourth Conference.

think that the moſt wonderful. The Mind of Man is too narrow for theſe Things.

P. After this think a little whether the infinitely various Action of *this ſingle Particle* could be the Action of other Matter upon it.

M. One who has the View, *Philon*, which I have at preſent, can hardly think on that Suppoſition with Patience. If we conſider that this is the Condition not of one ſingle Particle of Matter, but of *every Particle*; to ſuppoſe that all this is the Effect of other Matter acting upon them; is to imagine that there is infinitely more of *this other inſtrumental Matter* in the Univerſe, than of the Matter which it is ſuppoſed to move and actuate. This is a ſtill more inartificial and round-about Way, than the *ſubtile incumbent Matter* in the former Caſe. If nothing but the Action of Matter upon Matter will ſerve, what is it that moves this *other inſtrumental Matter?* Or where will the Inſtrumentality and Subordination of Matter to Matter end? This is to put the Deity quite out of Sight.

P. Leaving therefore theſe infinitely various, interfering, oppoſite Actions, propagated without Confuſion or Diſorder, through the Immenſity of Space, from every Particle to every Particle, as the proper Work of *Divine Power*; conſider in the laſt Place, that the Action of Matter upon Matter can only be according to the external Surface, and in Proportion to the Extent of that Surface; But Attraction operates

in

in Proportion to the Solidity of Matter; that is, it operates *from*, and *through* the whole internal Subſtance of Matter.

M. I ſee plainly that if Matter acted thus on Matter, neither the Matter acted upon, nor the Matter that impelled, could be ſolid or impervious to other Matter. This is the Work of the ſame Being, and of the ſame wonderful Kind, as Coheſion was diſcovered to be juſt before.——

P. Theſe, *Matho*, are ſome Conſiderations concerning the Nature of Matter in general, which ſhew us the mighty Power of the Creator conſtantly exerted in all Objects above, below, and round us: Nor do they require any deep Learning to be underſtood, nor other Preparation than common Senſe, and an unprejudiced Mind. As for Particulars you muſt have Recourſe to thoſe who have applied to the ſeveral Branches of natural Knowledge, and obliged the World with their Diſcoveries.

M. I am now indeed ſatisfied that we can neither turn our Eyes nor our Thoughts to any one Object in all Nature, where the Power of the Deity is not the firſt, or to ſpeak more truly, the only Thing that occurs to us. The Thought is awful and raviſhing!——You concluded lately that *the Particles of Light* were Matter or Body, becauſe they excited Heat and Motion in other Bodies: Pray acquaint me with ſomething of their Nature.

P. I can give you but ſmall Aſſiſtance here, nevertheleſs it would not be well on my Part

The fourth Conference.

not to tell you all I know, which may be done in few Words.——They are the ſubtileſt Matter we know, and have the ſwifteſt Motion: But ſtill they are Matter, attracted and repelled by other Matter, and have their Motion bent and reflected, as much as a Tennis-ball.

M. It is but reaſonable that the Matter, by which *Viſion* is performed, ſhould be extremely ſubtile: Viſion, I think, is the moſt ſubtile of our Senſes; and groſs or palpable Matter muſt both hurt the Senſe and darken the Object; or the Light itſelf would be ſeen and not the Object it fell upon. But what may the Velocity of the Motion of Light be?

P. From the Eclipſes of the Satellites of *Jupiter*, it is computed that Light comes from the Sun to the Earth in about eight or ten Minutes.

M. I believe I need not ſtudy to conceive this Velocity from any Compariſon.

P. You need not: the Swiftneſs of the Earth's annual Motion, which you admired ſo much, does not at all come near it.

M. How is the Motion of Light bent or changed?

P. If Light were not reflected from Bodies, you could ſee nothing.

M. I ought to have remembered that the Sun-beams are eaſily turned to all the Corners of the Room by a Mirrour. And now that I think on it, if the Paſſage of Light were not bent,

bent, I could not ſee Objects monſtrouſly diſtorted through uneven Glaſs.

P. In that Caſe, when the Ray is refracted or bent, you think the Object is in the Direction of that Part of the Ray which enters your Eye; though the Part of the Ray which falls on the Glaſs is in another Direction. This makes the Object ſeem to change its Place, or disjoins the Parts of it.

M. This ſolves many Doubts to me, which I ſhall not trouble you with obſerving.

P. The Rays of Light, in paſſing by the Edges of Bodies, are likewiſe bent or attracted towards them, though this can only be obſerved in certain delicate Circumſtances.

M. This ſeems to explain to me a Thing which I have often admired. In going by *Paling* or *Rails*, all of parallel Sticks, you will perceive both the Paling and the Objects at a Diſtance behind it to tremble or dance as it were. I have walked backward and forward for half an Hour together to conſider this. Now I ſuppoſe this is, becauſe the Eye paſſing through theſe bent Rays near the Sides of the Sticks, and coming immediately to other Rays not bent, ſees the Object ſuddenly change Place, and the Whole by this Means to have a tremulous or dancing like Motion.

P. You explain the Appearance very ingeniouſly and truly too in my Opinion.

M. If Light requires Time to move from Place to Place, if the Body it comes from be far diſtant, and alſo move ſwiftly, we cannot

The fourth Conference.

ſee it in the real Place: For while the Light is a coming to us, the Object may have moved a great Way.

P. You are in the right: and there is an Argument brought from this to ſhew the Abſurdity of the Ptolemaick Hypotheſis, where the whole Heavens are ſuppoſed to turn round in four and twenty Hours. For if we ſuppoſe the Diſtance of a fixt Star only ſeventy or eighty Times greater than the Sun's, ſo that the Light ſhould take twelve Hours in coming from the Star to us; it ſhould be ſeen ſetting in the Weſt, while in Reality it were riſing in the Eaſt, and contrarily.

M. That would be a monſtrous Inconvenience: The Motion of no Body therefore can bear any Proportion to the Velocity of Light, leſt we ſhould be conſtantly deceived in the Place of moving Bodies.

P. It is reaſonable to think ſo.

M. What is the Reaſon why Bodies are of different Colours, when Light is all of one Colour.

P. You preſs me too hard: Light is not all of one Colour, when the Rays are ſeparated, which may be eaſily done according to their different Degree of Refrangibility (as it is called) they are found to be of different Colours, as *red*, *orange*, *yellow*, *green*, *blue*, &c. and a ſcarlet Ribbon, for Inſtance, reflects the red Rays moſt ſtrongly; but what the Reaſon of this may be I cannot tell.

M. I

M. I believe indeed the Rays muſt be of thoſe Colours from what I ſee in the Rainbow.——But not to trouble you more on this Head, anſwer me only one other Queſtion. Pray what Sort of Men were thoſe *Scepticks* whom you mentioned once or twice in our Diſcourſe?

P. They were a Sort of Philoſophers, whoſe Principle it was to doubt of every Thing.

M. Did they make a Principle of it?

P. They did; for any one undeniable Truth muſt have confuted their whole Scheme.

M. Then I preſume they muſt have been much put to it in ſome Caſes: You ſhewed me an Inſtance or two above, where doubting ſeemed to me impoſſible. What Reaſon could they give for doubting that *the Part was leſs than the Whole?*

P. They avoided coming to ſuch Particulars.

M. Had they no Pretence for this affected Singularity?

P. They pretended there were contrary and equal Reaſons *for* and *againſt* every Thing that could be affirmed.

M. Were they certain of this?

P. That had been to affirm ſomething contrary to their Principle.

M. They could not be certain then whether they had Reaſon to doubt, or not.

P. They were not agreed on what Principle to found their univerſal Doubting, and therefore were divided into three or four Denominations.

M. Were

The fourth Conference.

M. Were Doubters ſo ſtiff in Opinion?

P. The Honour of their *Sect* obliged them to it.

M. I have enough of them *. And now, *Philon*, with your Permiſſion, I would go and conſider by myſelf what we have been diſcourſing of, that I may not give you the Trouble to tell me the ſame Things over again, when I come next to you.

P. That is not your Way; you rather improve upon what is told you. But perhaps we ſhould ſpeak more to the Purpoſe if we ſpoke leſs at a Time.

* We may ſee the Genius of Scepticiſm humorouſly repreſented in a few Sentences of a Letter of *Henry Stephens*, before the *Leipſick* Edition of *Sext. Empiricus.* 1718.—*An ex animo, et ut ſentis, ita loqueris? Ingenuéque verum fateris?* The Anſwer is, ὐ μᾶλλον τοῦτο ἢ ἐκεῖνο. *Hic Libellus ſeriàne tractat, an nugas? ἐπίχω. Ad hæc ſaltem reſponde: Eſtne Philoſophicum ejus argumentum? ὐ καταλαμβάνω. Age, quid definitum conſtitutúmque tibi de illo Libello eſt? οὐδὲν ὁρίζω. At mihi tuam de illo ſententiam, quæcunque eſt, aperi? Imo nulla mihi ſententia eſt, utpote nihil opinanti. Quid facis igitur? σκεπτόμενος διατελῶ, &c.*

THE

The fifth Conference.

THE

Fifth CONFERENCE.

The Conſequences of the inactivity of Matter conſider'd with Reſpect to the Productions in, and about our Earth.—Matter owes its Origin to an immaterial Being. The ſimple Exiſtence of material Subſtance ſhews the infinite Power, *and the various Species of Things formed out of it, the* Wiſdom *and* Goodneſs *of this Being. That any Sort of Matter we know hath paſſed through divers Operations, and various Art, before it falls within our Knowledge. The imperceptible Tranſlations from dead Matter to vegetating Bodies. From the moſt imperfect* Plant *to* Man, *Vegetables and Animals riſe in a continued* Scale *of Perfection. Propagation of Plants and Animals by Seeds, not mechanical: Or the Seed not the Cauſe of the future Plant, nor the former Plant of the Seed. The one appointed to follow the other, in order to conſtitute a ſettled Courſe of Nature. Hence an* eternal Succeſſion of Cauſes and Effects, *a groundleſs and unphiloſophical Suppoſition. The mutual Aptitudes, Relations, and Connexions between the Parts of the* Scale, *ſhew the Unity of Deſign. This ſhewn in the Article of* Food. *Of the ſucceſſive* Evolution *of Bodies, in the Formation of many Species of winged Inſects. That all* theſe

theſe inferior Creatures operate blindly, and yet regularly; or are directed by a Principle, more perfect than the Reaſon of Mankind. Monſtrous Productions occaſioned by Accidents, diſturbing the regular Proceſs in the Formation of animal Bodies, according to the ſettled Courſe of Nature.

The fifth Conference.

LVII. *P.* WHAT is the Meaning of this Viſit, *Matho*, ſooner than ordinary? For though I am always glad of your Company, I did not expect to ſee you for ſome Days.

M. I underſtand, from what you ſaid before we parted laſt, that the Inactivity of Matter muſt have other Conſequences, beſides thoſe we then conſidered; and I was impatient to be informed of them more particularly.

P. What other Conſequences do you mean?

M. There is a great Variety of particular Bodies, in and about our Earth, which are formed out of this *dead Subſtance*; now the Conſideration of theſe can be no leſs delightful and entertaining, than that of the great Bodies of the Univerſe. And it ſeems to me abſurd, to neglect the Inſtances of Power and Wiſdom that are near and round us; and only to take Notice of thoſe that are ſo far diſtant as the Heavens.

P. Well, what are your Thoughts of Matter, after you have conſidered it ſtill more narrowly?

M. You

The fifth Conference.

M. You know I began to ſuſpect Matter after our firſt Conference: But before you ſhewed me ſo fully, at our laſt Meeting, the Nature of *Coheſion*, I ſtill thought Matter ſtood in Need of no Support from any Thing elſe, to be what it is; that it owed its Origin to no Cauſe, was neceſſary in itſelf, and above the Reach of any Power, to be by that deprived of Exiſtence. Now, I find, I was under a grievous Miſtake in this whole Affair; and believe all young People fall naturally into the ſame Prejudice; though nothing, in my Judgment, concerns us more nearly, than to be early convinced, that the Courſe of Nature, and Stability of Things, muſt reſt upon another Foundation.

P. On what other Foundation?

M. On the *Power* and *Government* of an *Almighty Being*, which affords a better Proſpect, and more Security to Mortals, than ſuch a dead Subſtance.

P. Might not this viſible Frame of Things have exiſted always, and without any Cauſe, either to govern, or give it Origin?

M. After what has been ſaid, it is perfectly ſuperfluous to aſk that Queſtion. The rude Subſtance itſelf, not wrought up into any Form, nor diverſified by any Art, ſtands in need of a conſtant Support, that it may exiſt in *any Manner*; and farther requires an Almighty Artiſt, not leſs ſkillful, than powerful, to make out of it ſuch a beautiful Fabrick as we behold. I ſhould ſooner believe a Man, who

The fifth Conference.

who was to tell me, that *Iron* firſt made itſelf, and after that, faſhioned all thoſe curious Pieces of Art which are wrought from that Metal; than one who told me, that this viſible Frame of the Univerſe is not the Work of a Powerful and Wiſe Cauſe. *What ſtands in need of a conſtant Support from another Cauſe, that it may exiſt any Way, ſtood in need of the Power of that Cauſe, to give it Exiſtence at firſt.*

P. Your Argument is of the right Sort, *Matho*, and carries along with it all the Evidence of an Axiom. That only can be without a Beginning, which cannot poſſibly have a Cauſe; a Being, to wit, of infinite Power and Knowledge: Contrarily, therefore, a Thing which cannot be without a Cauſe, and is void of all Perfection, muſt have had a Beginning. And ſuch a Subſtance is dead Matter. Theſe are the two moſt oppoſite Things to each other, we can imagine. Hence, if this rude and unwrought Subſtance ſhews us, by its bare Exiſtence, the wondrous, extenſive Power of the Creator; the Variety of Things that are faſhioned out of it, their Uſe, and Application to ſomething always higher, muſt equally convince us of his Knowledge and Wiſdom. Nothing is wanting to complete the *mighty Deſign*; and thoſe Things, which we might think ſuperfluous, are ſtill neceſſary to the intended Variety, and to carry up the *Scale* of created Beings. For this Variety is not propoſed for Oſtentation of Power; that would be a falſe Thought; but

to

to finiſh conſiſtently a great and harmonious Scheme. The fifth Conference.

M. To whom ſhould the Deity make Oſtentation of his Power? That would be, to ſuppoſe Beings capable to underſtand and fathom the greateſt Things he could perform. This Variety muſt have a higher End. Every Thing rather ſhews Infinity of Power, conducted by infinite Wiſdom.

P. And thoſe ſet on Work, likewiſe, by the moſt diſintereſted Goodneſs. Theſe Perfections are not only neceſſarily united in their Nature, but united alſo in the Effects they produce.

M. It muſt be ſo: If they were ſeparated in the Effects they produce, it would come to the ſame Thing, as if they belonged to ſeparate Beings, if that were poſſible; and the Effects of Power might be hurtful. I ſaw before that a ſovereign Degree of Power and Knowledge muſt naturally raiſe a Being above *Fear* or *Malice:* So that *Goodneſs* muſt be the Motive, when infinite Power and Knowledge work; or, without this Motive, the Univerſe could never have exiſted.

P. Let us remember then, what was concluded before; namely, *That the very Reſiſtance of Matter to perform any Effect, is made the Means of its doing all it performs*; and we muſt be ſatisfied that the Wiſdom and Power, and therefore the Kindneſs of the Deity, could not have been more conſpicuous any other Way, than by employing to ſuch a Variety of

Purpoſes

The fifth Conference.

Purpoſes a Thing, which, in itſelf, or to a Being of leſs Power, is unfit for any Purpoſe.

M. This Variety, even an unſkilful Spectator muſt admire, by beholding the Outſides only of the Works of Nature: He can direct his View no where, but he muſt behold Things great, curious, and beautiful, made out of this unpromiſing Subſtance. It ſhines and warms, it cools and refreſhes, it is made Light to the Eye, Sound to the Ear, and by a wonderful Contrivance, nouriſhes and maintains our Bodies.

P. The Uſefulneſs of it, therefore, is equal to the Variety: And this is that, *Matho*, which hath brought it into ſuch Admiration, and really made it the Deity of Mankind. For while it is made to recruit the Decays of our Bodies, and gratify every Senſe, by the noble Appearance, the beautiful Colour, the fragrant Smell, or delicious Taſte; we do not conſider the Power and Contrivance by which all this is effected. We forget to carry our Views to the juſt Extent; for certainly, nothing could have been better fitted, to give us the firſt Leſſons concerning the Power and Wiſdom of the Creator, than to conſider the Poorneſs of the Stuff every where heightened by Art, and made uſeful in the Application. The very Deadneſs and Inactivity of Matter is diſguiſed by the Power that actuates it, and lyes concealed under a thouſand Beauties of Life and Vegetation. Nor can we poſſibly be miſtaken about it, ſince we ſee it again in its

its fading and corrupted State. What does the fineſt Complexion, or the moſt beautiful Flower, ſoon end in? The fifth Conference.

LVIII. *M.* It is the Uſefulneſs, the Variety, and the Contrivance of thoſe Things round us, which we daily behold with ſo much Inattention, which I would have you explain to me at preſent; that for the future I may behold them with ſome Sort of Intelligence and rational Pleaſure. It is either ſtupid, or ſhameful, for a rational Being to walk conſtantly amidſt ſuch Inſtances of Contrivance and Power, with the Indifference or Inſenſibility of an unreflecting Animal. This, as I ſaid, was what haſtened my Return, ſooner than you expected.

P. Willingly, *Matho*, would I aſſiſt you in ſuch a reaſonable Deſign, if I knew where to begin, or were not afraid of obſcuring theſe Matters, by the confuſed Hints only which I am able to give you. Therefore, as I told you, when we laſt parted, you muſt have Recourſe to the Works of thoſe great Men, who have ſucceſsfully enquired into Nature. The Subject here is not one, but as many as there are different Species of natural Bodies: Each of which require a ſeparate Study, to underſtand but a Part of the Art and Contrivance employed in it; nor have theſe Things been treated with that Connexion and Dependance one on another, ſo as to bring them under one general View.

The fifth Conference.

M. We need not be ſolicitous about a Method, ſince none can be obſerved in ſuch a Converſation as this: I only want to be directed to the moſt general Conſiderations, that I may have ſomething to exerciſe my Thoughts upon, when, perhaps, I ſhould otherwiſe be idle.———Pray what did you mean, juſt now, when you ſaid that this great Variety is neceſſary to carry up the *Scale* of created Beings?

P. Every Thing, *Matho*, above rude and unwrought Matter, riſes in Art and Contrivance, the farther we advance, or the higher we can go. Many are the Productions, before we come to the ſeveral Species of *Plants* and *Animals*; of which there is an amazing Variety: And yet there is a Gradation of Perfection from *Kind* to *Kind*, through the whole, where every Species is raiſed above the former, by gentle and eaſy Tranſitions. Thus a *continued Relation* runs through the entire Syſtem of material Beings (or rather through the whole Creation) which joins the *leaſt* with the *greateſt*, and ſhews the whole Work to be *one*, and the Effect of the ſame Power and Knowledge.

M. I ſuppoſe you mean, that in ſome Species of Plants and Animals the Art is more acceſſible and ſimple; but in the next ſuperior Kind the ſame Art is continued, and farther heightened with ſome Additions or Variations, as it were to lead us from the more ſimple to the more complex Works of Power and Knowledge.

P. You

P. You expreſs my Meaning exactly.

M. This is both pleaſant and intelligible, and juſtifies, I think, the Inference you make, *That the whole Work is one, and the Deſign of the ſame Power and Wiſdom.* For I eaſily conceive that an *Earth-Worm* is more ſimple in its Parts and Compoſition, than a *Snail*, which carries its Covering or Houſe on its Back, and hath Eyes in the Points of it's Horns, as I have heard; and that this Creature is not ſo complex as a *Spider* or *Ant*, who move by the Help of Feet, and have a Variety of Limbs; and that theſe Inſects again are more ſimple in Contrivance than a *Fly* or *Gnat*, who, beſides their Motion by Feet, have alſo Wings to ſoar aloft.

P. You have named ſome of the Wonders of the inferior Creation, *Matho*, and ſpeak ſo diſtinctly of thoſe Things, that one would think you had been making your Obſervations before-hand. If it be doubtful whether the Snail hath Eyes in the Points of its Horns, it is certain the *Spider* hath ſeveral Pair of them: And the different Sorts of Motion in theſe Creatures, with the different Artifice by which they are effected, will always excite our Admiration.

M. Theſe Objects fall generally under our Obſervation, and they require but little Reflection. But pray what Productions are there before we come to the Species of Plants; or which lye betwixt theſe and unwrought Matter?

The 6th Conference.

P. The firſt Thing we perceive in this Subſtance is Workmanſhip; therefore we cannot in Propriety ſay that a Stone of any Sort is unwrought Matter. No Body could imagine that a Ruby, an Emerald, a Diamond, or any of thoſe Stones that are called *Gems*; or that a Magnet, Marble, Flint, or ſo much as a common Pebble, is rude and unwrought Matter. If we conſider Cryſtal, Amber, all Sorts of Minerals and Metals; Salts of all Kinds; none of theſe certainly is Matter in its primogenial Form and Texture.

M. They are not indeed; but muſt have undergone farther Art and Workmanſhip, before they could appear in any of thoſe Forms.

P. Though we know not exactly how theſe are produced, yet Productions they are; and (as you ſay) various Art and Power is exerciſed on every different Species of theſe, as much as on the Stone of a Cherry, the Tooth of an Elephant, or the Horn of an Animal, concerning the formal Production of which we are very little wiſer. Water itſelf, dropping from the Roof of ſome Caves, is ſoon after congealed into Stone. Marble was once not hard, otherwiſe Parts of different Bodies could not have been found in it. You obſerved before a Variety of Subſtances formed in the animal Body; Bones, Sinews, Fleſh, Blood, and not rarely one Sort of Stone; all which are yet made out of the ſame common Aliment.

M. I am entirely ſatisfied in this Particular. Matter, that had undergone no Workmanſhip, muſt

muſt be conceived to be uniform and all alike, without Variety of Impreſſion, or different Degrees of Firmneſs, Coheſion, or Conſiſtency, ſuch as we ſaw it to be when the *great Bodies* of the Univerſe were formed. All farther Difference muſt be the Effect of farther Power and Art.

P. It muſt be ſo; for all Growth and Vegetation, even of the hardeſt Subſtances, is performed by the new Accretion of imperceptibly ſmall Particles: And theſe Subſtances are again diſſolved into Particles as minute and imperceptible.

M. You ſhewed me before, that we could form no Conception of Matter, but as the Power of the Creator is exerciſed in it, to effect Coheſion and ſolid Extenſion; for that conſtant Action is the Baſis of its Exiſtence: And here I perceive again it could not fall under the Senſes, unleſs the ſame Power were farther exerciſed upon theſe Particles, to bring them by another Act within the Reach of ſenſible Perception. And certainly this is wonderful that, let us conſider Matter which Way ſoever we will, we meet always with the Power of the Deity; and the more Ways it becomes known to us, the more Acts of that Power we diſcover.

P. Your Reflection is pertinent, *Matho*, and it muſt be as you ſay. If we could conſider the Deity in himſelf, and abſtractedly from what he hath produced (as we attempted in our laſt Conference) we ſhould find his Na-

The fifth Conference.

ture and Perfections neceſſary and infinite, and be every where prevented with the Sight of them: And when we conſider his Effects aright, we muſt find his Power and Knowledge in every Thing, examine it which Way we will.

LIX. *M.* The ſeveral Species of Things you have mentioned are formed within the Bowels of the Earth.

P. Or at leaſt below its Surface; and though they are not produced from Seeds, like Vegetables above Ground, yet ſome of them come near enough to ſhew almoſt the ſame Work in different Subſtances. One Species of thoſe Stones, called (I think) *Stalactites*, in Shape like the ſlender Stem of a young Plant, broke any where up or down, hath always the ſame Star-like Figure or Impreſſion in the Heart; as when you cut a Plant above or below, the Fibres make ſtill the ſame Appearance in the Section. The ſame is obſerved in the ſeveral Sorts of *Coral*, which ſeems to be of a middle Nature indeed, between a Plant and a Stone.——

M. Permit me to aſk you what is contained within the Bowels of the Earth; or is it known what the whole Maſs down to the Center conſiſts of?

P. It is not known: The deepeſt *Mines* go but a ſmall Way below the Surface, and after that all is Conjecture.

The fifth Conference.

M. We cannot know then what this Globe we live upon contains for four thouſand Miles down.——What do they find in the Mines?

P. Different Sorts of *Earth*, *Stone*, *Coal*, &c. lying in *Strata*, one over another, with here and there the *Ores* of Metals.

M. Theſe are not Matter in its original Form.——What Sort of Matter do they conjecture to be from that to the Center?

P. They ſuppoſe that the ſolid Cruſt of the Earth is not very deep; and ſome have thought that the internal Part is a ſubterranean Ocean, while others imagine that there is a vaſt Maſs of Fire about the Center. It hath been ſuppoſed, in order to account for a difficult Appearance in Philoſophy, and to avoid the Thought of ſo much dead Matter, that the internal Part of the Earth conſiſts of *vacant Spaces* and *Cruſts* alternately.

M. Theſe Conjectures are oppoſite enough, ſo that the Probability for any one of them muſt be an Argument againſt the reſt.

P. This is but one Particular of many, which lye without our Reach.

M. Leaving it then, you ſeem to think that all Vegetables above Ground riſe from Seeds?

P. That was long Matter of Enquiry and Diſpute; but it is now allowed to be true in all Caſes univerſally.

M. Why was it Matter of Diſpute?

P. If a Plant could riſe from any but a ſpecifick Seed, then it might be contended that any Thing could riſe from any Thing,

The fifth Conference.

which muſt have bad Conſequences in Philoſophy.

M. I underſtand; it is ſuppoſed that theſe *ſpecifick Seeds* keep the Species regular.

P. This is the conſtant Experience of Mankind: A *Fir-Tree* does not riſe from an *Acorn*, nor a Crop of *Wheat* where *Barley* was ſown.

M. That would certainly breed the laſt Degree of Confuſion and Diſtreſs to Mankind; and we cannot ſufficiently adore that Wiſdom which hath ordered Things otherwiſe. Yet I have ſeen the Root of an old Tree, where the Trunk had been cut off, quite covered with Excreſcences, different from *Muſhrooms* or *Toad-Stools*, with a Variety of pretty bright Colours. Theſe certainly vegetate, and yet they have neither *Flower*, nor *Fruit*, nor *Seed*; but ſeem to ſpring up from the Corruption of the decaying Wood.

P. The firſt Degree of Vegetation, *Matho*, is ſo fine that it is hard to trace it out, though above Ground. You know we are ſoon loſt in the Subtility of Nature's Operations. Hence it is that ſome Species of imperfect Vegetables impoſe upon the Inattentive, and paſs for mere anomalous Excreſcencies, though they are nothing leſs. The Species of *Fungi* (as they are called) are very numerous: It was one Sort of thoſe which you obſerved. The Structure of ſome Kinds of them is altogether curious, as you muſt have ſeen: And the diligent Enquirers into Nature have at length diſcovered that they

they riſe from a Seed, and are not ſpontaneous Productions from decayed Wood, or any Sort of Corruption, though they draw their Nouriſhment from ſuch Things. The fifth Conference.

M. I have indeed obſerved ſome of the broader Sort, with flat thin Caps, finely wrought below, having a ſlender Kind of Leaves, running very regularly from the Middle to the Extremity, like the Rays of a Circle: But theſe Seeds muſt be very ſmall, which require ſuch Attention to be diſcovered.

P. This is not the only Inſtance where the firſt Degree of Vegetation runs almoſt beyond our Ken. Where-ever the Seeds were not perceptible to the naked Eye, the Ancients ſuppoſed the Productions from them ſpontaneous and irregular: But the Invention of the *Microſcope* has enabled the modern Enquirers to make noble Diſcoveries in the Works of Nature, though ſtill the Subtilty of the Contrivance goes deeper than the Induſtry of Man can penetrate. So ſmall are thoſe Seeds, that it is to be doubted whether many Sorts of them are not conſtantly wafted up and down in the Air; ſince they ſo quickly take Root, and ſpring where-ever they can find a Soil delicate enough. For it has been diſcovered by the Microſcope, that the Mouldineſs which appears on ſpoilt Confections, Pickles, or even ſome Sorts of Liquors, by which they appear as if covered with a white Cruſt, are only numerous Cluſters of diminutive Muſhrooms.

M. This

The fifth Conference.

M. This is really ſurprizing, and carries the Beginnings of Vegetation almoſt out of our Sight indeed. What you ſay of a white Cruſt puts me in mind of another Particular I have often obſerved, and endeavoured to account for to myſelf, though in vain. Pray what are we to think of the ſeveral *coloured Cruſts* which we find on Stones, and the Bark of Trees? On the ſame Stone, or the Bark of the ſame Tree, you will ſee Spots of *white Cruſt*, of *black*, of *grayiſh*, and very often of *yellow*. At firſt they are very hard, and ſeem little other than a Colour inherent in the Stone; afterward they ſwell and riſe.

P. Theſe, *Matho*, are ſeveral Sorts of *Moſſes*, which you may know by their different Growths: For if you obſerve on the ſame, or different Stones, you will ſee the ſame Sort young and hard, more advanced, and at laſt ſpread, when their ſeveral Figures are eaſily diſtinguiſhable by the naked Eye. Some ſpread in a continued Leaf, others grow hollow above like ſmall Cups, others round on the Top like Muſhrooms, and ſome ſhoot out in Branches.

M. It is ſo indeed; theſe Varieties, and many others I have often obſerved with great Admiration: For I remember this was the firſt Thing that raiſed my Curioſity.

P. All theſe have their different Seeds, which do not require great Delicacy of Soil, but take root on any Thing where they can grow unmoleſted. Thoſe *Moſſes* which riſe

immediately from the Earth, are more perfect, ſome of them white, and hollow, or fiſtulous, and ſome of them not much inferior to regular Plants. The fifth Conference.

M. There are much perfecter Sorts which grow likewiſe on Stones, in the Form of a fine Pile or Furr, like Velvet, and of a gloſſy Colour between green and black. But the firſt Sort, which appears like Scurf or Cruſt, ſeems to riſe but one Degree above the unwrought Mold or Earth.

P. Yet we are far from being certain that this is the loweſt Degree of Vegetation.

M. Thoſe Moſſes growing on Trees ſhew, I think, that their Seeds muſt fly about in the Air.

P. We ſhall become too minute at this rate, *Matho:* However, what you ſay is more than bare Conjecture: For ſome Experiments ſhew that living Creatures themſelves float thus up and down in that Element. An unhealthy Tree is never without theſe imperfect *Superplants*; and the more unhealthy the Tree is, the better they thrive.

M. It ſeems, as ſome Animals can only live on other Animals, and have not a ſeparate Way of ſupporting themſelves; ſo ſome imperfect Vegetables can only thrive on other Vegetables.

P. There is ſome Analogy between the inferior Vegetables and Animals in this reſpect: And there is (if I might ſo ſay) a ſtudied Variety through all Nature: But ſome much perfecter

The fifth Conference.

perfecter Plants than Moſſes can only take Root on a Tree. You certainly remember theſe Lines.

Quale ſolet ſylvis brumali frigore viſcum
Fronde virere nova——
——quod non ſua ſeminat arbos,——

I was told of the *Miſletoe* at that Paſſage. However,

LX. One Thing you ſaid above ſurpriſes me more, *viz.* That any Vegetable ſhould take Root in mere Liquor, as thoſe little Muſhrooms you ſpoke of.

P. The Fact is nevertheleſs unqueſtionable: Two or three Sorts of Plants ſtrike their Roots in the Water, without touching the Ground at all; and, as a Proof of this, they float to and fro on the Pools where they grow.

M. This is a ſingular Inſtance of Variety.

P. As many Species of Animals can only live in the Waters, ſo many Sorts of Plants can only thrive in that Element, though their Roots are fixt at the Bottom; and of thoſe ſome never riſe to the open Air. Some Kinds of Plants alſo, as well as Animals, are amphibious, and can live either in or out of the Waters.

M. By the Weeds caſt out on the Sea-Side, the ſalt Water ſeems likewiſe to have it's peculiar Vegetables.

P. And that in great Variety; nor ſuch only as deſerve the Name of *Alga*, but Shrubs and larger Trees, with ſome of which near the Iſland

Iſland of *Crete* they uſed to dye Purple. *Pliny* tells us, that in the *Indian* and *Red-Sea* are whole ſub-marine Woods.

In the *Perſian* and *Red-Sea*, and many other Parts, Coral is produced, of which we ſpoke before. Under Water it is ſoft, but petrifies in the Air. But the Nature of marine Plants is not ſo well known, as thoſe on the dry Part of the Globe; as not being ſo acceſſible, nor to be trained up in different Circumſtances.

M. Hence, I ſuppoſe, the greateſt Variety muſt be on dry Land, where there is a greater Difference of Soils.

P. You ſee the whole Face of the Earth is covered with them, as with a large and coſtly Carpet.

M. The Carpet is very large indeed! and a new one ſpread every Year with more Variety of Figures and Colours than the *Loom* or *Needle* can boaſt. We do not think enough on theſe Things. A bare and naked Earth muſt have an unpleaſant Sight.

P. Not more unpleaſant to the Eye, than unfit for Habitation. We might have lived as comfortably on a Globe of Marble, as on ſuch a naked and barren Globe. We obſerved before, that the Diſpoſition of the Surface into Hills and Valleys was for the ſake of ſweet and running Waters, which only regarded the Animals and Vegetables upon the Earth. The Sea itſelf, that huge Magazine of Waters, was chiefly intended for the dry Part of the Globe; though at the ſame Time it ſerves for many other

The fifth Conference.

other wonderful Uſes, and is beſides a mighty Nurſery of living Creatures. Hence it is, ſince this *Element* is ſo abſolutely neceſſary for Animal-life and Vegetation, that it bears ſo great a Proportion to the dry Land. Some Philoſophers likewiſe, with a great Degree of Probability, ſuppoſe, that this Article of Vegetation occaſions a conſtant Expence and Conſumption of Water. Which ſhews us, that this great Proportion of the liquid to the dry Part of the Earth was ſtill more wiſely appointed.

M. I have in Truth often wondered, on looking at a Map or a Globe, to ſee ſo much of the Surface of the Earth covered with Water: But this accounts for it naturally, or rather makes this Diſproportion between them neceſſary.——But pray let me aſk you here again, if it be known how deep the Sea is?

P. You may be ſure it cannot be all of the ſame Depth. Iſlands and Rocks are generally ſituated near the Coaſts of the larger Continents; which ſhews that the Sea is there but of a moderate, or rather ſmall Depth. In withdrawing from the Land it becomes unfathomable: Hence it is natural to ſuppoſe that in the midſt of the large Oceans, as the *Atlantick*, *Ethiopick*, *Pacifick*, and *Great South Sea*, the Depth is greateſt. But what the Diſtance of the Surface of the Water there from the Ground below may be, is not eaſy to be determined. There is not the ſame Reaſon for an equal Declivity from the Coaſts to the

the Middle of the Ocean, as from the Middle of the Continents to the Coaſts: Yet poſſibly the Sea there may be ſome Miles deep.

M. Who hath hollowed out ſuch a *mighty Baſon*, and *filled* it with ſo uſeful a Fluid! All the great Rivers on the Earth themſelves, like gliding Oceans, were conſtantly to be drawn from this vaſt Repoſitory of Waters.

P. And drawn through the Air too, to the Tops of the higheſt Mountains, where they were to begin their Return over the Face of the thirſty Ground. And this Circulation was to be maintained through all Ages. The Vapours are raiſed by their ſpecifick Lightneſs, and mutual Repulſe; till coming to a colder Region, where their repellent Force is weakened, they are brought again into ſmall Drops, which fall by their own Gravity. Whence we ſee that the whole terraqueous Globe, Sea as well as dry Land, taking in the whole Region of the Atmoſphere, was contrived for the ſake of Vegetation, as the firſt and immediate Uſe; though Vegetation itſelf is ſtill referable to a higher Deſign. Upon this account it is that no Part of the dry Surface is vacant and unemployed. Not only the *Plains* and *Valleys* are delicately clothed, but the *wild Mountains* have their rougher vegetable Covering. Vegetation and Animal-life go together, and in the deep Winter languiſh together. The ſtately and noble Plants, which rear their Heads aloft, are perennial and long-lived, like ſome Animals; but more Sorts of both are of a

ſhort

The fifth Conference.

ſhort and tranſitory Duration. The *Inſects* revive with the Verdure of the Spring: Every Seaſon of the Year brings forth a new Variety: Every Soil and different Climate have their peculiar Species, both of Vegetables and living Creatures. As the Diverſity of the ſeveral Species is aſtoniſhing, ſo the Fecundity of the Individuals is no leſs ſo. Were all the Seeds of any of the moſt uſeful Plants employed annually for Vegetation, that alone in a ſmall Number of Years were enough to cover the whole Surface of the Globe. Learned Men have ſhewn the ſame with reſpect to many Animals, eſpecially in the Waters. But the Almighty Author of Proportion preſerves a juſt Balance, and diſpoſes the Superfœtation of his Creatures to neceſſary Purpoſes. The *Exuberance* ſhews his Power, and the *Application* his Wiſdom and Goodneſs——Theſe are only general Things, *Matho*, which it is eaſier for any one to admire in his own Thoughts, than to make worth another's while to hear. You ſee my Willingneſs; nor can any Words repreſent what an attentive Mind may eaſily obſerve. To ſay any more would but anticipate your Pleaſure.

M. You have rather given me a noble Proſpect, *Philon*, of the Productions in and about our Habitation. The Bowels of the Earth ſeem to be a vaſt *Laboratory*; the Surface of it is wrought into a beautiful and ſpacious *Garden*; the Ocean its *Fountain*, and (if I durſt go farther) the Air a mighty *watering Engine*.

If

If we look above and below Ground, the ſame common Matter is formed into ſuch a Diverſity of Bodies, as if they were wrought from Subſtances of contrary Natures. A Plant and a Mineral, or Metal and an animal Body, or (to come yet nearer) the Stone and the Fleſh of the ſame Peach, ſeem not to be Matter in the ſame Senſe. But aſſure yourſelf we are far from having done. I have many Queſtions to aſk; every Thing you ſay raiſes new Thoughts in my Mind, and one Particular above I either did not underſtand, or am not ſatisfied with.

LXI. *P.* What may that be?

M. I believe no young Perſon of ten thouſand ever ſaw a Field of Corn grow, without admiring the Miracle of Propagation from Seed, and that inconceivable *Fecundity of Individuals* which you mentioned juſt now. This is one of thoſe Things which firſt ſtrike the young and inquiſitive Mind with Wonder; and how the regular Obſervation of the Species is owing to the Seeds of Things I do not yet underſtand: But I ſhall proceed to aſk you my Queſtions by Degrees.——If one ſingle Grain of *Wheat*, or any other Seed, were ſown, and the Product of it preſerved and ſown; and the Product of that again preſerved, and ſown, and ſo on; how far do you think it would multiply? Or would there be any End of its Increaſe?

The fifth Conference.

P. According to the Courſe of Nature, we have no Reaſon to think it would ever ceaſe to multiply.

M. So I have often thought; and according to what you ſaid, it muſt in Time be ſufficient to cover the whole Face of the Globe. Now how comes this infinite Number of Plants and Seeds all to ſpring out of one ſmall Grain?

P. That is a Queſtion I can by no Means ſolve. It ſeems to me to carry the Subtilty of Vegetation far out of human Sight. And what heightens the Difficulty is, that the Seed, in ſome Caſes, is diſcovered to contain in Miniature the Plant that riſes from it, with ſo much Nouriſhment wrapt up in it, as may ſerve to its firſt Vegetation, till it can ſtrike Root in the Ground, and draw its farther Support from thence: And from this it is concluded that all its future Vegetation only nouriſhes and increaſes the Parts of this ſeminal Plant.

M. That Conſideration indeed makes the Propagation of ſuch an infinite Number of Plants and Seeds, all from one little Seed, above Meaſure aſtoniſhing. But what have the *Searchers* into the Myſteries of Nature thought of this?

P. It is really a *Myſtery*; however, ſome have had recourſe to the infinite Diviſibility of Matter to explain it, ſuppoſing that all the infinite Individuals of any Species, whether of Vegetables or Animals, were actually contained in the firſt original Seed.

M. And

M. And how came this *infinitely impregnated original Seed* to exiſt?

P. You preſs me too far.

M. Since, according to the Courſe of Nature, the Propagation from any of theſe *propagated Seeds* is indefeaſible, each of theſe muſt likewiſe be *infinitely impregnated?*

P. It muſt on this Suppoſition.

M. Did they reſt ſatisfied with this Explication?

P. They could not, I think, otherwiſe than by having recourſe to the conſtantly operating Power of an Almighty Being. And it is thus, in my Judgment, that the Origin of any Thing muſt lead our baffled Reaſon to ſeek a Solution of Difficulties in *Omnipotence.*

M. If we are forced to have recourſe to the conſtant Operation of that Power, this Suppoſition ſeems needleſs. But is this all that has been ſaid?

P. Others have ſuppoſed that the greateſt Part of the *terreſtrial Maſs*, at leaſt near the Surface, conſiſts of the Seeds of Things, ready wrought up and perfected, which are impaſſible in all the Changes that happen, till they come, in the Courſe of Things, to be brought into the Circumſtances of Growth and Vegetation: And that there is no more rude and unwrought Matter in the Maſs, than what may ſerve for a Support to that which is deſigned for future Plants and Vegetables: for I am not ſure if they include Animals in this Suppoſition.

The fifth Conference.

M. And yet if Animals be not included in it, they will have another Suppoſition to make for theſe, ſince there is the ſame Difficulty in both Caſes. Here it is not enough to ſuppoſe the Seeds of all Things finiſhed and wrought off at once, and repoſited any where: It muſt likewiſe require infinite Care and Direction, to produce theſe little impaſſible Seeds in their proper Time and Place, without Confuſion or Miſtake, according to the ſettled Law and Courſe of Nature, ſince they can do nothing of themſelves.

P. It is certainly ſo.

M. Though then there were ſuch *original immutable Atoms* repoſited, which contained the ſeminal Power, or were deſigned for the future Seed, yet when a Grain of *Barley*, for Inſtance, is ſown, and begins to ſpring up, what directs the *ſpecifick Atoms*, deſigned for that Seed, to it, rather than the *Atoms* deſigned for *Wheat*, *Rye*, *Oats*, or, in ſhort, for any other Grain? Or could the ſettled Courſe of Things be obſerved, if one Grain roſe where another was ſown?

P. As you obſerved before, that muſt breed the laſt Degree of Confuſion.

M. There are likewiſe many Things to be done, I preſume, after the firſt *ſpringing up*, before the future Seed is formed: For let us conſider a *Field of Corn*, a *Meadow*, an *Orchard*, or, in a Word, the whole Face of the Earth, as covered with Vegetables; and is not every Grain or Seed that riſes over the Whole, once

once in the Form of a green Blade or Leaf? The fifth Conference.

P. At firſt it is, or in the Form of ſomething as different from the future Seed, as a green Blade is.

M. And after that, I preſume, in other Forms ſtill, as the Seed draws nearer to a perfect Formation?

P. It is indeed in the Form of *Sap*, or of a *Bloſſom*, or *Flower*, or *Milk*: For all the Particles are once, or rather always in a liquid Form, till the Seed comes to be hardened.

M. What Hand then, or whoſe Art brings this Seed, whether in one Atom, or ſeparate Particles, through all theſe various Forms and Changes?

P. It is impoſſible to account for this, *Matho*, without the immediate Power of the Deity, ſince the ſluggiſh Particles can neither move, nor aſſemble themſelves from different Parts, nor fall into that conſtant Change or Order, which is requiſite to their coming out at laſt in the deſigned Form, or ſo as to make up the ſpecifick Seed.

M. If then the Power of the Deity muſt be immediately concerned in all this *various Work*, we need not, I conceive, be ſo anxious to find out, all at once, an original Stock of Seeds, to ſerve for future Vegetation through all Time.

P. In theſe Caſes we find out a *Compend* for the Deity, only by our own Miſtake; ſince after ſuch Suppoſitions the indefinent Operations of his Power and Wiſdom are ſtill neceſ-

The fifth Conference.

ſary. Matter is as much a dead reſiſting Subſtance in *Vegetation*, as in the Motions of the heavenly Bodies.

LXII. *M.* This likewiſe ſeems wonderful, That from the ſame *Mold*, and the ſame Sort of *Fluids* or *Juices* (as I ſuppoſe) ſo many different Sorts of Vegetables, and ſuch different Kinds of Bodies on the ſame Vegetable ſhould ariſe. In a ſmall Spot of Ground you ſhall ſee a great Variety of *Herbs*, *Flowers*, *Trees*; and belonging to the ſame Tree a great Difference of Productions, *Leaves*, *Bark*, *Wood*, a *mellow Fruit*, a *hard Stone* within, or perhaps a *ſtrong Shell* without. Has each of theſe Subſtances a different Seed? or will it be a ſatisfactory Explication, to ſay that the original Seed contains Leaves, Bark, *&c.* in itſelf.

P. Leaves and Bark are but excrementitious Parts of a Plant.

M. Yet they are as ſpecifically different from the Leaves and Bark of another Plant, as the Wood, or Fruit, or Seed itſelf: Account for this ſpecifical Difference of theſe Parts. You muſt either account for every Difference from the Seed, or give up the Pretence of accounting for any Thing from it.

P. Each Sort of Plant, they ſay, draws Juices proper only to its own Species.

M. What is meant by *drawing* here? In plain Language it ſeems to be as good as ſaying, *Each Sort of Plant forms itſelf.*——But when ſeveral Kinds of Trees may be grafted

on the ſame *Stock*, they ſeem to have but one Kind of Juice to draw. And yet the Fruit of each Sort preſerves the particular Colour, Taſte, Smell; and the Leaves and Wood remain with the ſame Differences from others as before. What is ſaid to this?

P. I know not whether any thing be ſaid to it.

M. To ſay the *Stock* draws to itſelf the Seeds of every other Tree that might be grafted upon it, and bear Seed, would be to ſuppoſe that every Sort of Plant draws to itſelf the Seeds of all other Sorts. And unleſs we will take the Liberty of talking at this Rate, this Matter of Fact ſeems to ſhew that there are no ſuch Seeds wrought off before Hand, and lying ready prepared; but that they are formed every Seaſon, as much as the Fruit or Leaves.

P. That is the more tenable Opinion.——

M. And then, though ſeveral Sorts of Animals were fed with the ſame Species of Grain, or with Hay of the ſame Field; that would not make their Fleſh taſte all alike: Beef would not turn Mutton, nor Pork Fowl, in ſuch a Caſe.

P. There are certain *ſecretory Glands*, which have the Orifices or Mouths of their Veſſels ſo fitted, as to admit only ſuch Particles for Nouriſhment as are of a particular Size, and proper or ſpecifick for the Plant or Animal, or the Part of any of theſe which is to be nouriſhed, and which therefore repell or throw off Particles of a different Size.

The fifth Conference.

M. Theſe Things are new to me, *Philon*; but I believe there muſt be ſuch Contrivances in the Animal-Body: Yet, if thoſe Glands are nothing but Matter, they can no more be the Cauſe of the ſpecifick Differences we are ſpeaking of, than an *Artiſt*'s Tools are the Cauſe of his Art, of which they are only the Inſtruments. There muſt be a higher Principle than *Orifices* and *Particles* of ſuch a determined Size. For if theſe Orifices, or the Texture of the Gland, be fitted to receive Particles of a larger Size, how are thoſe of a leſſer kept out? If to admit only Particles of a leſſer Size, how can theſe get in? Since the larger coming up along with them would naturally ſtop or obſtruct theſe Orifices. And if both Sorts come not up together, the *Secretion*, I think, was made before. And what is ſaid of the *Magnitude* of Particles, is true alſo concerning their *Figure:* Orifices or Paſſages deſigned for receiving Particles of one Sort of Figure, muſt be obſtructed by thoſe of another Figure, coming up along with them. —— Beſides, how come the various Particles thither? For as to *repelling*, or *throwing off*, which you mentioned, it is like the Plants *drawing* proper Juices to them. Attraction and Repulſe are not the Work of inert Particles. I remember you ſaid the Quantity of Motion once impreſſed is conſtantly decaying by the Action of Matter upon Matter. In this Caſe therefore the Impreſſion muſt be renewed on theſe Particles every Moment: Or rather, they muſt be conſtantly

conſtantly impelled, and that in various Directions, but not by the Power of Matter. The fifth Conference.

P. We are agreed, *Matho*, no Man ever had a Notion of Secretion purely mechanical. The admirable Structure of theſe Glands or Strainers, and of every other Part in the Animal-Body is only *inſtrumental*; but can no more ſupply the *Power* in a living, than in a dead Animal. The Mind of Man is ingenious to deceive itſelf. Seeing no other *Power* or *Direction* near at Hand, to which we can have recourſe, we ſuppoſe that the Matter in the animal or vegetable Body muſt have all thoſe Powers in itſelf, neceſſary to account for ſuch wonderful Appearances. But the Growth and Vegetation of all Things round us (not to ſpeak of the Work in the animal Body) is a conſtant, various, and infinite Miracle.

LXIII. *M.* This anſwers my Expectation, and agrees with what we have obſerved in the reſt of Nature. But tell me, before we leave the Subject, why ſhould ſuch Streſs be laid upon Vegetables riſing from Seeds? Let the Seed contain the future Plant ever ſo exactly, yet when the Seed itſelf and the contained Plant are formed, they paſs through various Changes, by a Power quite above that of ſluggiſh Matter: They are wrought from different Subſtances, and often from the Sap and Juices of a Tree of another Nature. The Seed therefore contributes nothing at all to the regular Continuance of the Species of Plants

The fifth Conference.

Plants (and poſſibly I might ſay Animals) more than the Plant contributes to the regular Continuance of the Species of Seeds. The two Caſes ſeem exactly alike: Both Formations are the Effect of a different Cauſe; though the one is appointed [arbitrarily] to follow the other, as a ſettled Courſe of Nature.——

P. Since the Atheiſt contends that all Things ſpring up ſo ſpontaneouſly at firſt, and therefore that any Thing might riſe from any Thing; it is a Point of ſome Conſequence, *Matho*, to ſhew him that a Plant only can riſe from a ſpecifick Seed, and a Seed only can be produced from a Plant, even in the loweſt Vegetables. This is a conſtant Matter of Fact againſt him. But I am afraid the Generality of Men go too far, in ſuppoſing that the Regularity of the Species depends upon the Seed: Whereas you have ſhewn very well, that the future Plant no more depends upon the Seed, than that Seed depends upon the former Plant. The Argument, thus ſtated and cleared, ſhews that there could not have been an eternal Succeſſion of Seeds and Plants, nor of *Father* and *Son*, for the Caſe is the ſame. This alſo has been contended for, and called an *eternal Succeſſion of Cauſes and Effects*. The Seed is neither the Cauſe of the Plant, nor the Plant of the Seed. It was a true Obſervation which you made at your firſt coming in, "That the "Courſe of Nature, and Subtility of Things, "muſt reſt upon a ſurer Foundation than "dead

"dead Matter." In Reality a Plant is formed from various Parts of Matter *not a Plant*; and a Seed from various Parts of Matter *not a Seed*. This ſhews the abſolute Power of the Creator over Matter, and that he is the immediate Cauſe of the Production in both Caſes. But he hath appointed the one Production to follow the other alternately, that there may be a ſettled Courſe of Nature, and that Man may know what he has to do. In a Word, we reaſon but by Halves with the Atheiſt, when we ſhew him that all Vegetables riſe from *ſpecifick Seeds*, unleſs we likewiſe ſhew him that theſe Seeds are the immediate Work of *Almighty Power*. Without this, theſe Seeds have only the Appearance of *Moulds* and *Forms*, for the Atheiſt to direct his Work by, leſt he ſhould happen to blunder.

M. You have expreſſed this Affair to my Satisfaction.——And if after this we conſider the *various Action* in the Growth and Vegetation of Bodies, by Parts only, or in the more ſimple Caſes, and ſtill riſe from the Individuals to the Species, till we have taken in the whole vegetable Kingdom, which makes a rich and beautiful Covering for the whole Face of the Earth; and if we take into the Account the numerous Tribes of Animals that are in the Waters, on the dry Land, and in the Air; the Inſtances of Power and Wiſdom manifeſted in theſe, appear to me more aſtoniſhing (if I durſt ſo ſpeak) than what we admired in Matter in general, and in the great Bodies of the Univerſe.

The fifth Conference.

P. Eſpecially if we admit into the reckoning, That in every Species of Vegetables and living Creatures, a different and new Artifice is employed: For (as you ſaid) the Art is ſtill heightened with new Additions and Variations, as it were to guide us from the more ſimple to the more complex Wonders by eaſy Steps. But this is perfectly as it ſhould be, *Matho:* The Artifice and Variety of Contrivance, muſt (to our Conception) be greater in Matter, as wrought into Vegetables, and the Bodies of living Creatures, than when rude and undiverſified by Workmanſhip. This is agreeable to what was ſaid, *That the Coarſeneſs of the Stuff lyes concealed under the Variety of Art; and the very Deadneſs of Matter is diſguiſed with a thouſand Beauties of Life and Vegetation.* I know what paſſes in your Mind on the Conſideration of theſe Things, by what paſſes in my own. The Mind would fain purſue each Particular ſeparately, till it has admired the Wonders apart: But Admiration itſelf is ſoon overpowered, and ſinks into undiſcerning Amazement. Even this is pleaſant. The Time will come——And yet after all, what you obſerved in another Caſe is true here: Whatever we conſider at the Time muſt appear to us moſt wonderful, becauſe our Faculties are every where overcome by an infinite Exceſs of Art and Power, which therefore we cannot compare.

LXIV. *M.* The Mind brought to this Impotence of Thought muſt turn away the View, and change the Object. —— You make the ſame Diſtinction, I ſuppoſe, of *perfect* and *imperfect* among Animals, as among Vegetables.

P. Every Species of living Creatures is perfect in its own Kind, conſidered in itſelf; becauſe exactly fitted to its own Way of Life, and all the Ends of its Exiſtence: But if compared with higher Species, it may be reckoned imperfect, as you yourſelf obſerved before of the *Earth-Worm*, compared with ſome other Reptiles. It is this comparative Imperfection which ſhews us the Continuation of the Scale, and Series of the Works of Nature above rude Earth. The lower Sort of Vegetables border (as you ſay) upon the unformed Mold; and in their firſt Appearance look like *Scurf* or *Ruſt*: Yet from this low Beginning the ſeveral Species of Plants riſe, till ſome of them mimick a Degree of ſenſitive Life, ſhrinking up, or contracting their Fibres on the ſlendereſt Touch. Here the animal Kingdom begins; for ſome Creatures, as the *Oiſter* and *Muſcle*, are like Plants, rooted to the Place where they were firſt bred. Theſe ſeem to have but one, or two Senſes at moſt, the *Taſte* and *Touch*: For as they are fixt to the Ground, they have no Occaſion for *hearing*, or *ſeeing*, or *ſmelling* Objects at a Diſtance, nor for Difference of Sex.

M. Animal

The fifth Conference.

M. Animal Life is here indeed very low, and ſeems but one Degree above the Plant, which, you ſay, contracts its Fibres on being touched.

P. As ſenſitive Life is here much confined, ſo ſpontaneous Motion is in the loweſt Degree we can well imagine; the Creature having only the Power to open its Shells for receiving the Food which is waſhed to it by the Waters, and to ſhut them again. Yet this Sort of Life is heightened by various Steps in each ſucceſſive Species, till at length the *ſenſitive Perfection* in ſome Species, as the *Dog*, the *Monkey*, the *Ape*, borders upon human Reaſon. There is ſuch a Diverſity in this, as well as the former Part of the Scale, as we cannot enough admire. No Man of the moſt extenſive Invention could conſiſtently deviſe a Variety, which does not exiſt; nor, without having ſeen them, conceive the Differences that are. Hence the Tranſitions are natural and eaſy. Every middle Species has a Connexion with that immediately above or below it, or ſomething that is common to it with both. Thus a continued Relation, or Affinity of Art and Contrivance, runs through the Whole till it reaches *Man*, who is at the Head of the viſible Part of the Series.

M. Doth not the Scale end where it ceaſes to be viſible?

P. There is no Reaſon to think it does, unleſs we thought the Soul of Man the moſt perfect living Being next to the Deity.

M. That

M. That Thought would be raſh, ſince there is ſuch an infinite Diſtance between theſe two. But is there not a Gradation of Perfection in the *living Part*, as well as of Art and Contrivance in the Bodies of Animals.

P. It is not ſo eaſy to ſpeak on that Subject, *Matho*; and the leſs eaſy as it falls in with a Point which has always been much controverted. Thus much we may ſay with Certainty, that as there is a great Difference between the Talents and Sagacity of one Species and another, ſo this Difference cannot be aſcribed to the different Formation of their Bodies.

M. You almoſt ſatisfy me already. *Matter can impart no Power nor Perfection.* The Arts of ſome Creatures are inimitable, either in hunting for the Prey, or avoiding the Purſuit: And it is but reaſonable to allow that the different Contrivance and Formation of the Body is rather fitted to the different Talents and Endowments of the living Part of brute Animals. But what Name will you give to that Principle, by which Brutes perform ſuch ſurprizing Things, if you do not allow it to be called a Sort of Reaſon in them?

P. The firſt Principle which directs *many* Actions of all Animals, and *all* the Actions (I believe) of the lower Animals; and which is the ſtrongeſt and moſt wonderful Connexion between the vegetating and animated Parts of the Creation; is much perfecter than human Reaſon: While the Principle which properly belongs

The fifth Conference.

longs to the Brute-mind is much inferior to the Reaſon of Man.

M. This is all Riddle: Pray what is that Principle which governs the Actions of the lower Animals, and yet is perfecter than the Reaſon of Man?

P. To tell you it juſt now, would be equal to begging the Queſtion of you: but if from conſidering Appearances you diſcover, and are forced to own it firſt, I ſhall not be obliged to you for allowing a Thing which you cannot deny.

M. I leave the Method to you. But are there no other Connexions, beſides *this*, between the vegetating and animated Parts of the Creation? You ſaid before *that Vegetation itſelf is referable to a higher Purpoſe.*

P. If the Earth had not been productive of Vegetables, it could not have been repleniſhed with Animals. Thus the lower Order of Things is referred to the higher; and in this Senſe the common Expreſſion, *All Fleſh is Graſs*, ſeems to be literally true.

M. And if there had not been Variety of vegetable Productions, there could not have been ſuch a Variety of living Creatures.

P. Abſolutely ſpeaking, the *laſt* of theſe does not depend upon the *firſt*. Infinite Power is not to be circumſcribed. But you obſerved that *infinite Power is conducted by infinite Wiſdom.* Had there been but one Species of each Kind, we ſhould have wanted innumerable Inſtances of the Power and Knowledge

ledge of the Creator. Hence in the ſettled Courſe of Nature the Variety of Animals is connected with the Variety of vegetable Productions. Different Sorts of *Plants*, *Herbs*, *Flowers*, are appointed for Food to the ſeveral Tribes of Animals. That was to be hurtful to one Species, which is ſalutary to another. One Creature climbs the higheſt Rocks for Herbs, another digs in the Earth for Roots, and we ſcarce know a Plant or Leaf, but what affords Nouriſhment and a Place of Nativity to ſome Tribe or other of the leſſer Inſects, of which there is by far the greateſt Variety in Nature. This is the Foundation of innumerable *Relations* and *Connexions* between theſe two Parts of the Creation; which ſhews the Work to be *one*, and the Deſign of the ſame Power and Wiſdom. If we could make the horrid Suppoſition, that Chance had produced the World, yet what conſtant *Errors*, *Blunders*, *Miſapplications* muſt there have been! Every Thing muſt have been monſtrous, and ſuch an harmonious Syſtem of Things infinitely impoſſible.

M. I ſee a Beauty from this Article of Food, which I was not aware of. There muſt be a pre-contrived Relation and Fitneſs between the internal Conſtitution of the Animal, and the Nature of that Herb or Plant, which affords it Nouriſhment: This opens to us a hidden Scene of Contrivance running through all Nature.

The fifth Conference.

P. Hence the Deſign and Uſefulneſs of thoſe *Effluvia*, or *Scents*, conſtantly emitted by all Sorts of Vegetables: Theſe gratefully affecting the olfactory Nerves, invite the related Tribe to their proper Food; or contrarily.

M. Solicitous Proviſion of the Deity! Methinks I ſee every Herb of the Field pouring out a conſtant Stream of ſubtile Vapour! Without this Minuteneſs of Care, the Animals might as well have devoured what was baneful, as what was ſalutary.

LXV. *P.* As the living Part of the Creation was to riſe higher in Variety than the vegetative Part, innumerable other Relations and Congruities appear to us, from the Article of Food and Nouriſhment, between the Animals among themſelves.

M. That I do not apprehend.

P. All the inferior Animals were to be but ſhort-lived; their dead Carcaſſes were to fall, and lye upon the Earth: Their Superfetation therefore, or the Increaſe above what is neceſſary for keeping up the Species, is appointed for a farther Uſe, namely, to be the Food of other Animals.

M. This I underſtand from what you ſaid a little before, *That the Almighty Author of Proportion preſerves a juſt Balance amongſt his Creatures, by diſpoſing the Superfetation to a farther Purpoſe.* And ſurely, to our Apprehenſion, it had been eaſier to prevent, than effect ſuch a Superfetation; for what was neceſſary

to

to keep up the Species, muſt have been but ſmall, in reſpect of the preſent Multiplication.

P. From this, innumerable other Relations and Aptitudes, both in the Bodies and living Parts of brute Creatures. Thoſe which are deſigned to live on animal Food have (as you obſerved) an inimitable Sagacity in diſcovering, and the very fitteſt Diſpoſition of Parts for catching the Prey allotted to them. Nor, on the other Hand, have the weaker Animals fewer Arts and Wiles for eluding the Purſuit. Here Art tallies to Art, and Sagacity to Sagacity. Every Creature knows, without being taught, where it is wanted for Food, and the Animal by which it is thus coveted.

M. This I conceive eaſily, and could give you an Inſtance of it from my own Obſervation. I have watched the Motions of a *Spider* for whole Hours together, and have ſeen when he durſt not attack a larger *Fly*, though entangled in his Nets, 'till he had gone over and over it many times, and at each Time had drawn a new Thread round it; 'till at laſt it was quite wrapt about with his Chains, and defenſeleſs. But I hate the Spider; he is a bold, cunning, mercileſs Enemy.

P. It is very right to hate the Image of Cruelty: Yet the *Spider* is juſt as cruel here, as the *Ox* which eats the Graſs of the Field, or the *Caterpillar* which devours the green Herb. Cruelty ſuppoſes Injuſtice, and Injuſtice a Knowledge of *Right* or *Wrong*, which irrational Creatures have not. Cruelty is the

The fifth Conference.

Deformity of rational Beings, and neither of the *Lion* nor the *Tiger*.——

M. I'm afraid I am wrong, and ought to change my Way of Thinking a little; for I ſee an unanſwerable Strength of Reaſon in what you ſay.

P. I do not ſpeak thus, *Matho*, with a View to defend a ſanguinary Diſpoſition in Mankind; I ſhould then contradict Reaſon and Humanity; but to aſſiſt you, as far as I am able, to a conſiſtent Way of Thinking, concerning the Works of the Creator. Men firſt make Brutes rational, and then cruel; and then there is an Example of high Authority ſet for the *Tyrant*, the *Ruffian*, and *mercileſs Oppreſſor*.

M. I ſee the Uſe that might be made of this miſtaken Notion.

P. Nor is this the only bad Uſe that is made of it.——A *mere ſenſitive Creature*, whoſe Senſes are gratified, is complete in its Kind, and in the Scale of Being, and has nothing to complain of, though it is not immortal: But we furniſh it with *our Reaſon*, and then the Complaint, which is made in its Name, paſſes with moſt People for reaſonable. Gluttony and Pampering are ſhameful and unmanly Vices, above the Poſſibility of being juſtified: Yet I think it looks as if thoſe who affectedly rail at Mankind, for living in the continual Butchery and Slaughter of the inferior Animals, intended the Invective higher: Or, how will they pretend to accuſe Man, and clear the Creator?

Creator? This is not the Place to conſider, what Pain an unreflecting Animal may feel: It is not the ten thouſandth Part of what a rational Creature muſt ſuffer in like Circumſtances; (Anguiſh and Diſtreſs of Mind cut deep every Moment) and it is a Pain that muſt be multiplied by the Infirmities and Languiſhing of unprovided old Age. In ſhort, if thoſe nice Folks had no other Meaning but Commiſeration to the inferior Animals, they ought never to ſtir abroad, nor tread upon the Ground, but with the greateſt Caution, for fear of taking away the Life of ſome little harmleſs Creature. Let them ſuppoſe that there were no carnivorous Animal in Nature; and, in Conſequence of that, they muſt ſuppoſe that the Species and Individuals, which live on Vegetables, ought to have been incomparably fewer; and therefore that the Species of Plants and Vegetables ought to have been fewer in Proportion. And if the immediate Uſe of *this Globe* were for the Production of Vegetables and Animals, that ought, likewiſe, to have been ſhrunk into leſs Dimenſions. And having thus broke the Scale and Proportion of Nature, let them try how they could mend it again, and give us one of their own Faſhion.

M. From this I ſee that what Men ordinarily interpret to be Animoſities and Hoſtilities in Nature, among the Tribes of Animals, are not *Animoſities* in the ſame Senſe as thoſe exerciſed by Men; but the Application of what

The fifth Conference.

would otherwiſe be a *Nuiſance*, to a farther Purpoſe; and this founded on innumerable, and wonderful Aptitudes and Relations in the Nature and Bodies of Animals, by their Creator.

P. That appears to me the more rational and conſiſtent Way of conceiving this Matter.

M. I agree with you, and think it looks like want of Candor and Fairneſs, to miſconſtrue Appearances, which are capable of having a conſiſtent and rational account given of them. Beſides, it ſeems a Piece of Fool-hardineſs, to meaſure our Knowledge with the Wiſdom of the Creator.

P. Many learned Men have excellently deſcribed the admirable Structure of Body, the Talents and Arts of the ſeveral Species of Animals, for this Effect, who did not ſuppoſe theſe to be Helps to Cruelty, or Inſtruments of Malice and mutual Hatred. In a word, though there were no carnivorous Animal in Nature, might not the ſame, or an equal Objection be raiſed againſt thoſe that feed on Plants? An Army of Inſects is more terrible than the *Wolf*, the *Tiger*, or the *Lion*; the *Shark*, the *Crocodile*, or the *Alligator*. Theſe might be commiſſioned to deſtroy every green Thing on the Face of the Earth.——Or, ought there not to have been any Inſects in Nature? How comes it to paſs then, that there is either *Blight*, or *Mildew*; *Wind*, *Rain*, or *Thunder*, but according to our Preſcription?

M. I ſee there would be no End of ſuch Objections, 'till Man had overturned all Nature, and made himſelf independent.——

LXVI. After this, where go we next; or how doth the Scale riſe from the *Oiſter* and *Muſcle?*

P. I am not ſure if it be allowed, that theſe are the loweſt Sort of living Creatures; and I only offered them as an Inſtance: Animal Life, like Vegetation, begins very low, in more Species than one or two. Yet, I think, the Inhabitants of the Waters, though exactly fitted to their Way of Life, are leſs perfect, to our Apprehenſion, than the Inhabitants of the Air, or dry Land. There are divers Sorts of Shell-fiſh, which are fixt to one Place; and the firſt Species that are not thus fixt, as the *Scallop*, the *Periwinkle*, *&c.* have nearly the ſame ſimple Compoſition of Parts, and local Motion, in a low Degree. Others tranſport themſelves from Place to Place, by creeping obliquely on the Ground, or by wriggling or flapping on the Waters, rather than by regular Swimming.

M. I have, indeed, obſerved theſe ſeveral Sorts of Motion in different Inſects, at the Bottom of the Water in ſmall Brooks.

P. It is inſtructive, *Matho*, and wonderful, to conſider the Beginnings of ſpontaneous Motion in thoſe inferior Creatures. The mighty Author of Nature has imitated Weakneſs and Infirmity (if the Expreſſion may be pardoned,)

The fifth Conference.

doned,) to make the Tranſitions eaſy, and the Modes of Motion various. This is remarkable, either in Land or Water Animals, according to the Structure of their Bodies: But after we are come to the regular Swimmers, nothing can be more curious than their ſmooth, long Figure, for piercing through that denſe Element. The quick Vibration of the Tail darts forward the Body with a Velocity, like that of an Arrow in the Air.

M. The ſeveral odd Shapes of Fiſhes ſhew us, I think, that there muſt be more Modes of Motion in *Swimming* than *Flying*.

P. And yet, if you obſerve carefully, you will rarely ſee two different Species of *Birds*, or *Fowls*, but what have a different Sort of Motion, even in their Flight.——The ſwifteſt Swimmers begin to ſhew a Tranſition from Swimming to Flying; For one Sort of Fiſh, to avoid the Purſuit of the Dolphin, (as it is ſaid) riſes above the Waters, uſing its large Fins inſtead of Wings. The Connexion between *Swimmers* and *Quadrupeds*, is very plain in ſeveral Species; the *Water-Newt*, the *Lizard*, the *Sea-calf*, the *Alligater*, and the terrible *Crocodile*. The *Otter* and *Beaver*, though amphibious, are perfect Quadrupeds. I cannot pretend to lead you through the Serpent Kind, many of which are likewiſe amphibious, and ſhew another Sort of Gradation from Water to Land Animals. In the *Cameleon*, and *Lizard*, beforementioned, we ſee the Serpent and quadruped Shape blended together.

ther. And many Sorts of Fowls ſwim on the Waters, as well as fly in the Air. Fiſhes and Fowls agree in this, that both are oviparous; except the *Whale*, the largeſt of all Animals, which, they ſay, brings forth her young alive: Whereas the more perfect Land Animals are viviparous, and bring forth their young completely formed.

M. Might there not be as large Animals at Land, as in the Sea?

P. The Weight of the *Whale* is ſupported by the Water, a ſoft and yielding Element, and therefore by near the Surface of its whole Body: Fiſhes being generally of almoſt the ſame ſpecifick Weight as Water. It is otherwiſe with Land Animals; the *Elephant* is ſupported on four Feet, a much leſs Extent of Surface in Proportion to the Weight.

M. I ſhould think the whole Weight of the Fiſh were ſupported by the under-half of its Body.

P. If the whole Weight were ſupported by half the Surface, when the half of the Body were under Water, the Fiſh could ſink no farther.

M. It muſt be ſo; when the Fiſh is almoſt quite covered, the Water preſſes againſt every Part of its Body.——I could give you an Inſtance of the Connexion between different Species of Animals, if I were not afraid it might be trifling.

P. It

The fifth Conference.

P. It is not fair, *Matho*, to be thus on the Reſerve; as if we were watching for each other's Miſtakes.

M. I have often admired the Species of *Mice* and *Birds*, united, as it were, in the *Bat*, which wants only ſo much of a perfect Mouſe, as to ſhew the Tranſition to the Bird Kind.

P. This Inſtance is far from trifling. The Bat is viviparous, and ſuckles its young, as other Mice do. They have no Feathers, but are, like Mice, covered with Hair, and fly by the help of a large Pair of Membrane-Wings, the Contrivance of which is very ſingular, being extended on each Side, between the fore and hind Legs.

M. And behind likewiſe; ſo that theſe Wings are extended round the whole Body, except the Head of the Animal: And ſurely this is a ſtrange Art in contriving Flight.

P. There is a Species of *Squirrels* too, they ſay, which flies; and one Sort of Lizards certainly does: And many Kinds of Inſects, which at firſt creep about under various Figures, at length take Wing, and mount in the Air.

M. You have not yet told me of any Creatures that change from one Species to another; pray explain that Particular.

P. I ſhall better ſatisfy your Curioſity, and give you a ſtronger Idea of ſome of thoſe wonderful Transformations, by ſhewing you the Figures of ſeveral beautiful *Butterflies*, and of the

the *Caterpillars*, under the Form of which they at firſt creep about upon the Leaves of Plants, drawn from the Life, by the Hand of a Lady *.

LXVII. *M.* Here is ſuch a large and beautiful Butterfly, as indeed I never ſaw before.

P. It is no Wonder; theſe are bred in warmer Climates. Look; here is the ſame Creature, (or the Parent of it rather) feeding on that Plant, in a different Shape.

M. Bleſs me! This is a monſtrous, loathſom, prickly Worm! I ſcarce think it poſſible that ſuch a glorious Animal ſhould riſe from that hideous Thing.

P. Ah! *Matho!* I thought you had other Notions of Poſſibility, when we were ſpeaking of the Works of the Almighty.

M. Pardon me, it was my Surprize. I have ſeen Creatures ſomewhat reſembling this before, creeping about on the Ground, or on the Blades of Graſs; but not near ſo large and ugly.

P. You will ſee Variety of them by turning over.——

M. Here are many Sorts indeed, as beautiful in the one State, as diſagreeable in the other. ——Here are monſtrous Spiders too.

P. The Deſcription of theſe on the oppoſite Page will ſurprize you.—

M. What terrible Animal is this?

* *Madam* Maria Sibilla Merian, *of* Amſterdam.

P. That

The fifth Conference.

P. That is a *Surinam* Crocodile, *Matho*: But you may look over the Book at your Leiſure another Time.

M. You believe all theſe Things then.

P. The Author of that Book was none of your *romancing Travellers*: She ſailed to the oppoſite Part of the Globe, to collect theſe Curioſities of Nature, many of which ſhe brought home with her. Beſides, the Cabinets of the *Curious* are full of ſuch Creatures preſerved. And though there are not, perhaps, ſuch Varieties of Species here, yet theſe Transformations are as frequent, or rather conſtant with us, as in *America*.

M. Pray explain to me the ſeveral Steps of this wonderful *Metamorphoſis*.

P. You will find an Account of this to better Purpoſe in thoſe Authors, who have profeſſedly treated on this Subject: But to give you ſome Sort of Satisfaction at preſent, You muſt know, that the Butterfly, or Parent-inſect, lays her Eggs in ſome convenient Place, where they may be ſafe from Accident, and her Off-ſpring find ſuitable Food when hatched. The Animal firſt produced is a ſmall Maggot, or Worm, which feeds on the Leaves of the ſame Plant where it was hatched. The Nettle is a great Regale for one Species of them. This Maggot ſoon grows, by its luxuriant Food, to the Bigneſs of a Caterpillar, or of thoſe hairy Worms you have ſeen creeping about on the Ground. After they have completed a certain Period in this Form, they retire to ſome

Shelter,

Shelter, and build themſelves a *Repoſitory* or *Tomb*, as if ſatiated with this Sort of Exiſtence. Here the Animal is to paſs into a State of Inſenſibility, or rather dies: For the organized Body loſes its Form, and becomes again a Sort of Chaos, or is reduced into a Maſs of Confuſion. But this proves the *Embryo* of a different Creature; for from it comes out a ſhapeleſs Thing, called a *Chryſallis*, or *Aurelia*; And from that deformed Production riſes a beautiful Butterfly, curiouſly formed, adorned with painted Wings, and fit for Flight in the Air.

M. And in what Time are all theſe Changes performed?

P. In a few Months of the Summer.

M. Pray can you ſhew me all the *three States* of the ſame Animal, in any of theſe Figures!

P. All three are repreſented on almoſt every Plate. Turn to Plate 38. Here is the Caterpillar of an enormous Size: Upon that Stalk below, is the *lumpiſh Aurelia*, into which it is transformed: And this is the Butterfly or *Phalæna*, which riſes from the *Aurelia*. It remained in the *Aurelia*, or *inſenſible State*, from the 23d of *June* to the 20th of *Auguſt*.

M. What are theſe?

P. That is the *Proboſcis* of the Animal, three or four Inches long, divided into two. It unites both Parts, and thereby forms a *Tube* or *Pipe*, wherewith it ſucks the Honey from the Bottom of the Flowers.

M. What

The fifth Conference.

M. What are your Thoughts concerning this Metamorphoſis?

P. It appears to me to be a ſucceſſive Evolution of Bodies, ſuch as perhaps the *Greeks* would have called a *Metaſomatôſis*: But whether, as there are three different Bodies, one included in another, there be three different living Creatures, or only two, or but one, I cannot determine.

M. This is the moſt wonderful Particular I have yet heard of.

P. It is indeed a Miracle made conſtant, or appointed to be a ſettled Courſe of Nature, (as every Proceſs of Generation is, if rightly conſidered:) For the Species of theſe Creatures, which paſs through Changes analogous to this, are very numerous. The *Silk-Worm* is one of them; and the Place ſhe builds for her Transformation is all of that ſoft and fine Material. The common white Butterfly comes, by a like Proceſs, from the green Caterpillar you have ſeen feeding on Cabbage-leaves. And all thoſe Sorts of *Phalænæ*, or *Moths*, which fly about in the Evening, or by Candle-light, are thus produced by a double or triple Generation.

M. I am glad there are ſo many Species of them; I ſhall the more eaſily obſerve thoſe ſurprizing Changes of Figure in one or other of theſe Sorts.

P. See here on this Plate, drawn by the ingenious Mr. *Bradley*, Eggs of the Silk-Worm:——That is the *Caterpillar* or *Nympha*, which

which is hatched from theſe Eggs:—This is the *Cone*, or *Bag of Silk*, which the Caterpillar ſpins for her own Monument:—This lumpiſh Thing is the *Chryſalis*, which is excluded from the Ruins of the Caterpillar's Body.—And this is the Butterfly which proceeds from that Chryſalis, and again lays the Eggs, to renew the ſame Circle of Generation. The fifth Conference.

M. One cannot enough admire this complex Proceſs.

P. Below you ſee the Caterpillar that feeds upon the Nettle, with the Chryſalis and Butterfly ariſing from it.

M. It is this Sort of Caterpillars, but ſomewhat blacker and larger, I have ſeen creeping about on the Ground. But what mean theſe Horns of the Butterfly?

P. Theſe are called its *Antennæ* or *Feelers*, of which there is a great Variety, according to the ſeveral Species of thoſe Animals. They have likewiſe *Tubes* or *Suckers*, as you ſaw above, for thruſting down into the Sockets of Flowers, which at other Times the Inſect coils up very artificially under its Mouth, ſo that they do not appear.

LXVIII. *M.* I have obſerved this Sort of Butterfly to hang or ſtick, as if it were dead, in ſome *By-Corner* of a Room, during the whole Winter; and to begin to fly about again when the Seaſon became warmer.

P. There are many Creatures, *Matho*, which thus paſs the Winter in a State of Numbneſs

The fifth Conference.

or Sleep, and revive again in the Spring. Had the Place been warm enough, you would have ſeen the Butterfly flutter about the Glaſs of the Window in the Day-time, all Winter.

M. I remember, indeed, to have ſeen, after a long and ſevere Froſt, the little Flies begin to move and jump about, even upon the Snow itſelf, before it was quite diſſolved. Pray how can theſe little Animals endure ſuch intenſe Cold, for ſo long a Time, without periſhing? They have neither Coverings of Hair, nor Wool; nor Shelter to fence them from the piercing Winds, nipping Froſts, or Rain. Larger Animals would be ſtarved to Death in one ſingle Night of ſuch Lodging.

P. All we can do here is to admire, without being able to underſtand, how theſe Creatures are thus preſerved.

M. How can they live without Food all the Time?

P. *Naturaliſts* obſerve, that while in ſuch a State they ſuffer no Waſte or Decay of Parts; and therefore require no Food.

M. Should you or I ſuffer no Decay of Parts, if we ſlept conſtantly for three or four Months together?

P. The Caſe is different: We ſhould ſtill breathe, and perſpire, (as they call it) which would occaſion a conſtant Waſte of our Bodies.

M. Do not theſe Animals live, while in a dormant State?

P. I confeſs, *Matho*, I do not underſtand theſe Things, and therefore cannot anſwer your Queſtions.——

M. You ſaid the *Inſects* returned only with the Verdure and Herbage of the Earth, which was to afford them Food.

P. None of thoſe winged Inſects which ſurvive the Winter, feed on Plants or Leaves: Theſe are their Food only in their *Nympha*, or *vermicular State*, the Summer before. They change their Diet with their Shape; nor have the winged Creatures any Apparatus, I believe, for Maſtication of Vegetables.

M. Are there no largar Animals than *Inſects*, that paſs the Winter in a State of Numbneſs and Sleep?

P. The *Bats* you mentioned are another Species of thoſe *Sleepers*.

M. Theſe I might have thought on: I have known their Retreat in a Hole of a Wall, where great Numbers of them lay the whole Winter, without ſtirring.

P. The *Swallows* likewiſe retire in *October*, and paſs the Winter in a motionleſs, and ſeemingly lifeleſs State, under the hollow Banks of Rivers; ſo that not one of them is to be ſeen in all the Country, after a certain Day.

M. Might not one try to keep them in Cages all the Winter?

P. It is a Creature that cannot be tamed. Though the *Lion* and the *Elephant* may be made familiar with Mankind; yet ſuch ſmall

The fifth Conference.

Creatures as the *Mouſe* and the *Swallow* are quite untractable; as *Pliny* informs us.

M. I am willing to believe it; for the leſs Creatures are, they ſeem the more imperfect, and muſt therefore be the more intractable. No Art, I believe, could tame a *Beetle* or a *Spider*.

P. Some Animals are of a ſavage Nature: But the chief Reaſon ſeems to be, that we do not know their Diet. The *Swallow* lives on Inſects, and is the only Creature that feeds flying. On this account, Providence hath kindly ordered its Retreat during the Winter: And on the ſame account, all Sorts of *Spiders* paſs that Seaſon in a dormant State: The *Serpent-race* alſo, which feed on *Frogs*, *Toads*, and ſuch like Animals, ſuffer an Intermiſſion of Senſe all that Time.——

Qualis ubi in lucem coluber, mala gramina paſtus,
Frigida ſub terra tumidum quem bruma tegebat.

M. You deal much in the Poets: But this does not ſatisfy me how the Bodies of theſe Animals, eſpecially the *Swallows*, could lye ſo long in ſuch Circumſtances, without being diſſolved, or corrupted.

P. I have as little to ſay to this Inſtance, as to that of the *Inſects*. If the Blood of the Creature circulates all the while, that will prevent Corruption or Diſſolution.

M. The Difficulty ſtill remains. Why does not lying ſo long in ſuch wet and terrible Circumſtances,

cumſtances, directly ſtop the Circulation, and kill the Creature ? The Confere

P. As theſe ſeveral Species of Animals, *Matho*, are ſingular Inſtances of the Creator's Care, and of the various Methods of his Providence ; ſo his Power is manifeſted in them, above the common Courſe of Nature : And it ſhews us, that when he pleaſes, the Continuation of Life does not depend on Food. It is certainly Matter of Admiration, that an Animal ſhould live only two or three Months of twelve, and paſs all the reſt of the Year in a State of Inſenſibility : And yet, by all the accounts I have ever heard, this is true of the *Cuckow* ; which, having early finiſhed the Buſineſs for which it appears, retires in the Month of *June*, and is not ſeen again (at leaſt with us) 'till the *April* following. Nor is it reckoned among thoſe Birds which change their Climate.

M. This is, indeed, a notable Inſtance of Variety.—But with Reſpect to the Life of Animals ; pray tell me how it happens, that if a Part be cut off from ſome Creatures, that Part ſeems to live for a conſiderable Time by itſelf, or at leaſt moves ? I have ſeen the Tail of an *Eel*, when ſeparated by a Stroke from the Body, move and twiſt itſelf for a great while.

P. I am as ignorant of this as you are. *Anatomiſts* have obſerved, that ſome *Inſects* have ſeveral Lungs, and therewith ſeveral Hearts. This might account for the Boys cruel Diverſion, of ſeeing a *Fly* whirl round,

The fifth Conference.

after they have taken off its Head: But it is not applicable to *Serpents*, *Eels*, and ſeveral Sorts of *Fiſhes*. The very *Leg* of an Inſect will move for a ſmall Space, when torn from the Body, where there can be neither Heart nor Lungs.—With reſpect to all theſe Things, I can only ſay again, that our very Ignorance is not without Satisfaction, when we conſider that it is neceſſary concerning Objects, where infinite Knowledge and Power have been exerciſed.

M. It muſt be ſo indeed. But

LXIX. As ſome Birds retire to paſs the cold Seaſon in a State of Inſenſibility, you ſeem to ſay that others remove to diſtant Countries then.

P. It is certain many Sorts of Birds ſhift their Climate according to the Seaſon of the Year. The *Woodcock* comes to us in *October*, and the *Quails* in *April*; and after ſome Stay both Sorts retire again. Theſe are called *Birds of Paſſage*. One Sort of Geeſe comes yearly to breed on ſome particular Rocks only on our Coaſt, and are ſeen no more the whole Year round. The *Stork* and the *Crane* have been memorable in all Ages, for their annual Peregrinations, though they do not viſit us. Theſe Birds of Paſſage are ſeen after their Return, and are obſerved to aſſemble in great Flocks in order to go away; but no Body ever ſaw them coming or going: Whence it has been ſuppoſed that they remove and return only

ly in the Night Time. But what ſeems wonderful in this Caſe is, that they ſteer their Courſe, as well over Sea, as dry Land. When the Woodcocks come to our Iſland, they are under a Neceſſity of croſſing the Sea. Quails have been often ſeen in their Paſſage at great Diſtances from Land. There are other Sorts of Land-Fowl alſo, which Mariners are ſurpriſed to ſee flying above them, a great Way from any Coaſt. Nor is it leſs certain that ſome Species of Fiſhes paſs and repaſs between diſtant Parts of the Ocean annually at ſtated Seaſons. The *Salmon* in our Rivers ſwim up as far as the Water can carry them, for the ſake of repoſiting their Spawn in ſuch a Depth, where the Influence of the Sun may reach it; which having performed with ſurprizing Exactneſs, they return without farther Concern, leaving the future Fry to be inſtructed in the Arts of Life, in the watry Element, by another Hand.

M. The Meaning of that Expreſſion I do not conceive; but though every Particular you have told me be wonderful, yet it is moſt ſurprizing that Birds bred at Land ſhould fly quite out of Sight of it, and venture themſelves above the Ocean, where they can have neither Food nor Reſt! How know they on what Point of the Compaſs to fly; or that there is at all any Land beyond ſuch a Tract of Ocean? Did they ever conſult the Map for the Situation of Countries? Or what do they when Night overtakes them?

The fifth Conference.

P. Do you think, *Matho*, if you were put between a Pair of Wings, that you could guide yourſelf through the Air, and in the dark too, to a diſtant Country you had never ſeen before?

M. The greateſt Philoſopher could not do it: It is a Thing above the Reach of human Knowledge.

P. You own then they are guided by ſome more perfect Principle than human Reaſon?

M. I remember what you ſaid, but will own nothing, till you tell me the Principle itſelf.

P. Have you ever conſidered a *Honey-Comb*, or a *Spider*'s *Web*?

M. Often, and with Admiration.

P. Who teaches theſe little ſhapeleſs *Inſects* to work ſo artfully with ſuch Tools, and in ſuch Materials?

M. I cannot tell; but it is ſtrange that the *Spider* ſhould ſpin a Subſtance, which is liquid in its own Body, into ſo fine, and withal ſo ſtrong a Wire.

P. The Wire which the *Silk-Worm* draws out of the Juice of her Body is no leſs remarkable both for Strength and Fineneſs. A hundred Yards of it do not weigh a Grain.——

M. But this is from the Purpoſe of my Queſtion.

P. Not ſo far as you imagine. Tell me if a *young Lady* were transformed into a *Silk-Worm*, or a *Spider*, as the Poets ſay *Arachne* was; do you think that her being ſhrunk up into

into that diminutive Figure, would teach her either of theſe notable Arts?

M. That would be to ſuppoſe that the *mere Figure* taught theſe Inſects their Dexterity. Their Figure can teach them nothing, though it muſt be adapted to their Art, as was obſerved before. A *Loom* could not teach a Man the Art of Weaving, nor any other *Inſtrument* the Art in which it is employed: But one, who underſtood or had invented the Art of Weaving, might contrive a *Loom* to put the Invention in Practice.

P. You argue unexceptionably well, *Matho.*

LXX. We admire the Wire drawn by a Worm or Spider: What do you think of the *Hair* and *Wool* of Animals?

M. I can ſee no Similitude between theſe and the former.

P. The *Hair* and *Wool* of Animals are formed out of a liquid Subſtance; they are fine and ſtrong too.

M. But they grow, inſtead of being drawn, or ſpun.

P. Does *growing* then appear ſo ſlight a Thing? Theſe ſeem ſo much the more wonderful, as there is no living Creature to aſſiſt or produce the Effect; there is nothing here but unactive Matter.

M. I am afraid I ſhall be obliged to come over to your Side.

The fifth Conference.

P. Hair and *Wool* are more than Wires: The *Curious* have obſerved that the ſlendereſt Hair is a hollow Tube, with a Pith, or internal Subſtance in it.——Obſerve this Figure: Here is the ſingle Hair of a Mouſe, as obſerved through a Microſcope by the excellent Mr. *Derham*.

M. Surprizing! Is this Variety of Work within the Compaſs of a ſmall Hair? How amazing is this Minuteneſs of Art!

P. The Hairs of larger Animals are each a Bundle, or Congeries, of ſuch Pipes or Tubes, which in ſome Caſes can be ſeparated: So that Finery, Deſign, and a Complication of Contrivance reigns every where, in the very excrementitious Parts of the Bodies of Animals.

M. Well, I own that the ſingle Hair of a Mouſe is by much a more fine and artificial Thing than the Spider's or Silk-worm's Thread. I did not reflect on the Myſtery of Vegetation; the particular Direction of every Atom! But even theſe Threads or Wires are wonderful, if we conſider them as the Manufacture of a poor little Inſect.

P. Yes, if we might conſider them in that View: But you have allowed already, if one of the human Species (ſome great Philoſopher, for Inſtance) were contracted into this diminutive unpromiſing Shape of a Caterpillar or Spider; that the being transformed into ſuch a Figure, could not teach him that Art.

M. It

M. It could not, if he did not underſtand the Method and Secrets of that Art at preſent, with the Help of all his Reaſon. If mere Shape or Figure can teach a Creature nothing, Change of Shape or Figure could not teach the Philoſopher more. The fifth Conference.

P. Do you think that the Caterpillar knows what it is doing, and to what Purpoſe or End it works, while it manufactures the Silk?

M. Why ſhould it not?

P. Does it know that this Cone of Silk is to be a *Repoſitory*, where the Remains of its Carcaſs are to be ripened into a *ſhapeleſs Grub*, out of which a nimble-winged Creature is to riſe?

M. Pardon me; it cannot know this wonderful Proceſs of Generation, nor what is to ſpring from the Decays of its own Body. This exceeds the Knowledge of the moſt perfect Animal.

P. It cannot then have any Notion of what it is doing, while it is building its own Monument?

M. It works thus, I ſuppoſe, without Knowledge, for the ſatisfying of ſome Appetite.

P. You owned before, at our laſt Meeting, that Power, not directed by Knowledge, is but *blind Chance*, or *Temerity*, which can produce no conſiſtent or regular Effect. But here in this Operation, the Inſect works on a long, pre-contrived, and really myſterious Deſign, without knowing what it does; and yet it

The fifth Conference.

it does all in the moſt regular Manner. For here you are to remember, that every Individual of the Species works exactly in the ſame regular Form, and that for the firſt Time: A Creature can die but once.

M. I know not what to ſay then, or how the Animal is directed. I am ſatisfied it cannot know the *Metamorphoſes* that are to ſucceed: And how it ſhould act ſo conſiſtently to this End, and not know of it, I cannot find out.

P. Does the *Spider*, think you, know before hand the Nature of the Liquor in her Body; and that it will become a tenacious Wire in the open Air, though ſpun ſo fine?

M. I am at a loſs what to anſwer to theſe Queſtions. I am ſure we could not know the Nature of this Liquor, but from the Effect already performed: And I do not think the *Inſect* knows the Nature of the Liquor at all, but falls directly to ſpinning, I cannot tell from what Principle.—

P. The diligent Enquirers into Nature have obſerved, that many Sorts of flying Inſects have a *Piercer* or *Terebra*, with which they wound the Buds or Leaves of Trees, Plants, Fruits; and inſert in the Wound their Eggs, with a Liquor or Kind of Venom, which perverts the regular Vegetation of the Plant, producing an Excreſcence, where the Egg is hatched, and the Maggot fed; or where perhaps the Animal, according to its Kind, is preſerved the whole enſuing Winter.

M. This

M. This is agreeable to what you told me before, of Plants ſerving for Food, and a Place of Nativity, to the firſt Period of *Inſect-Exiſtence.* The fifth Conference.

P. Now can theſe little Creatures know, that the Liquor they ſhed is of ſuch a hurtful Quality to the Plant, as to diſtemper, or raiſe a Swelling, or *Button* upon it, which may afford Lodging to their Young when hatched? Or that the Matter of this Excreſcence will be proper Food for them, till the Seaſon returns, and the Verdure of the Earth is renewed? For, as was ſaid before, the *Mother-Inſect* never taſted of this Food herſelf, but purſues quite a different Sort of Diet.

M. That would be to allow them a readier Inſight into the Nature of Vegetation, and a more extenſive Knowledge into the Congruity between one Thing and another, than Man has with all his Experience, or could have, unleſs he were thus taught by what theſe little Animals practiſe. And I think it is not to be imagined that a Creature, which lives but for one Seaſon, ſhould know any thing of the Variety or Return of Seaſons.

P. You are in the right; theſe Creatures are produced themſelves, a few Weeks only of the Summer before they do all this. And there is one Species of theſe little Inſects, which lives only but a few Hours after it becomes a winged Animal; and yet it performs all the Offices relating to its Poſterity, as if it had acquired the Experience of many Years.

The fifth Conference.

M. One cannot enough admire thoſe Miracles of Nature.

P. Let us again take a View of the little *Fry* in the Waters, which, immediately on being excluded the Spawn, are left to ſhift for themſelves in the midſt of a rolling Element, ſurrounded with innumerable Enemies; and yet, without Tutor or Guide, they inſtantly become perfect Maſters of all the Arts of Life, as I obſerved—

M. Pray, without giving me more Examples, or aſking me more Queſtions, ſhew me how theſe little Inſects act thus regularly, without knowing what they do? Or by what *Principle* they are thus guided to purſue ſuch diſtant Proſpects? For I grant you now as much as you pleaſe, that this Principle is inconceivably ſuperior to the Reaſon of Mankind.

P. You know I am not raſh in anſwering ſuch Queſtions.

M. Well! Thus it is to be nurſed and tutored in what one does not know by one's ſelf.

P. More Examples (as you ſay) are needleſs; for it is by thoſe untaught Arts, and unknown to theſe weak Creatures themſelves, that all the inferior Species, without any Exception, are continued as ſecurely, as the Race of ſtronger Animals, or as Man himſelf is.

LXXI. *M.* I am ready to believe it; ſuch Weakneſs muſt be conducted by ſome wonderful Art: But in the Interim, till I can know more of this Affair, pray inform me if all Sorts of Inſects go through theſe Changes, from a firſt, to a ſecond and third State of Exiſtence? The fifth Conference.

P. All do not; there are many *Reptile-Inſects* which never take Wing; but all winged Inſects (ſo far as I know) paſs through one or more Changes; if perhaps we except the *Ant*, for ſome of them likewiſe get Wings. The different Transformations of the *Gnat* are not leſs wonderful than thoſe of the Moths and Butterflies; and in one Reſpect more wonderful, as their firſt Stage of Exiſtence is in the Waters. So that this Inſect alone ſhews us the Tranſition from Creatures that live in the Waters, to thoſe that ſubſiſt on dry Ground; and again, from thoſe that ſwim or creep, to thoſe that fly in the Air. And indeed the Species of thoſe winged Inſects, which paſs their vermicular State in the Waters, are very numerous. The *Ephemeron*, which, as was mentioned juſt now, lives but a few Hours in its laſt State, is one of them. Some of theſe form to themſelves, by the Help of a glewy Subſtance, which deſcends to the Bottom of the Water with the Eggs out of which they are hatched, little rough *Caſes* or *Tubes* of Sand, ſmall Gravel, or the like; which they draw after

The fifth Conference.

after them when they ſearch for Food, and into which they retire in Time of Danger.

M. I now remember; it is long ſince I have obſerved theſe artificial Caſes, in Springs and ſmall Brooks; and was ſurpriſed to ſee a Compoſition of Sand, ſmall Stones, and other Materials, as I imagined, move like a living Creature.

P. The *Scarab*, or *Beetle-kind*, of which there are ſeveral Species, undergo Transformations not unlike thoſe taken notice of before; as doth the beautiful Inſect called the *Lady-cow*, paſſing through a *Nympha*, *Aurelia*, and *mature* State; and it has, like the Beetle, what they call *Elytra*, or *Caſe-wings*.

M. From what you ſay then, I underſtand theſe *Elytra*, or *Caſe-wings*; for we have often been diverted with ſeeing the Beetle prepare for Flight; and the Sight is really entertaining. He firſt raiſes one of his black Scales, as if he were opening a Door in his Side, and extends a folded Wing, which he expands at Leiſure. Then he opens the Caſe on his other Side, and having put the other Wing in Order, takes Flight. He makes an odd Sort of a Figure while on Wing, with his two Scales ſtanding erect, as if he carried ſomething on his Back: Nor is it leſs amuſing to ſee him alight; for as he does not fly far, we have followed him. He takes ſome Time to fold up his Wings again, which he does by Degrees, firſt on the one Side, and then on the other;

other; and having brought them within their *Caſes*, he claps down the Lids on them. The fifth Conference.

P. It is a ſingular Creature indeed, as if it were a Compoſition of a Tortoiſe and a winged Fowl.

M. We have teaſed him to make him fly; but being haraſſed, he rather truſts to his *Coat of Mail*, than to his unwieldy Flight.

P. It is ſtill more wonderful, that ſuch a Creature as the *Spider* ſhould fly, without the Help of any Wings at all.

M. I can have no Notion of their flying; but I have obſerved a Spider to jump, or dart itſelf to a conſiderable Diſtance, from one Part of the Wall to another, and ſometimes perpendicularly upward.

P. Though I never ſaw them fly, I am ſatisfied of the Fact, as Perſons of the greateſt Veracity have given the Accounts of it, and vouched it from their own Obſervation.

M. Then, I think, I underſtand how they extend their Webs between the Tops of Buſhes, and very often a-croſs ſmall Rivulets: They muſt either fly, or dart themſelves over with their Threads.

P. It muſt be in ſome ſuch Manner, for they are not *Swimmers*; and a great Part of their Game is over ſmall Brooks.

M. But pray what are we to think of thoſe innumerable Threads, which we often ſee ſtretched upon the Tops of the Graſs, all parallel-wiſe, ſo that whole Fields are ſometimes covered with them, eſpecially after the Harveſt-

The fifth Conference.

Harveſt-Months? If you look at the Ground between you and the Sun, when riſing or ſetting, you will ſee the Threads ſtretched along, ſhining like Virginal-ſtrings.

P. Theſe, they ſay, are the Work of *Field-Spiders*, or *Wanderers*, as they are called; but whether ſuch Spiders leave their Threads looſe at one End, to be diſpoſed in a parallel Direction by the Wind; or if they leave them quite looſe and floating in the Air, I can give you no Information.——

M. I have a Suſpicion, that other Animals undergo conſiderable Changes of Figure, between their firſt and laſt State, as well as *Inſects*.

P. All Animals whatever, I believe, are of a different Form, when yet imperfect, from what they are afterwards: But on what Ground do you entertain this Suſpicion?

M. I have ſeen in Ditches, Ponds, and ſtanding Waters, *Frogs*, under three or four different Shapes. I have caught them in my Hands little *Tad-Poles*, with ſmooth round Heads, and finny Tails, by the quick Vibration of which they could ſwim pretty nimbly, conſidering the Club-figure of their Heads. I have ſeen them with their Head and Belly larger, and two Feet ſprouted out behind; but they did not then ſwim ſo cleverly. By viſiting them every Day, I have caught them with two Fore-feet, not fully branched from the Body, and the Tail ſtill pretty long: And I have ſeen them with the Tail not quite fallen

fallen away, after they have left the Water, and been leaping about on the Graſs. In a little Time after, they had no Veſtige of their Tad-pole Shape. Here ſeems to be an Evolution of Members, at leaſt: For the Animal in its firſt State appeared as different from itſelf in the laſt, as a *Fiſh* is from a *Quadruped.*

P. It is not difficult to obſerve thus far, *Matho*; but the Animal had undergone conſiderable Changes from its ſeminal State, before you took notice of it. And if the Obſervation were as eaſy to be made on other Creatures, probably there is full as great a Difference between their *firſt imperfect* and *laſt ſpecifick Figure.* All the larger Creatures ſeem at firſt to be *Swimmers*, as they are ſurrounded with a Liquor.

M. Perhaps the firſt Thing diſcoverable here, is an Animal in Miniature, as it was in Vegetables, where the future Plant is ſo diſcovered.

P. It is ſo indeed; the firſt Thing diſcernible, is a ſmall, ſpontaneous, moving Creature, or Animalcule; but (to uſe your Expreſſion) as far different from the future Animal, as a Fiſh is from a Quadruped. As to the Geneſis, or firſt Formation of this *Animalcule*, we are entirely Strangers to it. Nature (to ſpeak in the common Way) has carried the firſt Beginnings of animal, as well as vegetable Life, quite out of the Reach of our Faculties.

The fifth Conference.

M. Some Things occur from what you ſay, which ſurprize me. If the *Elephant*, the *Horſe*, the *Stag*, and the *Bull*, were firſt in the Form of the *Swimming Fry*, they muſt have undergone great Changes indeed! When I compare this with what I obſerved before, concerning the Formation of Inſects, by a double or triple Proceſs, it is exceedingly more wonderful than what we admired before, in the Propagation of Plants by Seeds. And I differ ſtill more from *thoſe* who aſcribe the regular Continuation of the Species, either from Plants or Animals, to certain little, pre-exiſting, or pre-contrived ſeminal Atoms. Every Thing in theſe *ſucceſſive Evolutions* requires the immediate Operation of the Creator's Hand. If thoſe Things were left to the Care of dead Atoms, and if any Thing at all could be produced, what ſhould hinder *one* Grain from riſing where *another* was ſown? or the *Fox* or *Serpent* to be formed inſtead of the *Lamb* or the *Dove*?——O! the amazing Univerſality of thoſe Miracles, which are conſtantly wrought through the whole Creation, that we may have a regular Courſe of Nature!——How ſhall I deſcribe the Burthen of Thought which I feel in my Mind, when I would purſue the Power of the *Creator*, every where at once forming the living Part of the Creation!——

P. I ſhould almoſt envy your Pleaſure, *Matho*, if I did not participate of it: But no Words

Words can expreſs ſuch a Scene of Power, where Admiration itſelf muſt fail.——

M. Shall we conclude then from what we have obſerved, that Fiſhes ſuffer the leaſt Change of Shape, before they come to their adult Size; as their State of Perfection and Imperfection are not ſo far aſunder as in other Animals? That all Bodies are formed out of Matter in a liquid Form? And that Fiſhes are the eldeſt Children of the Creation?

P. There is a Degree of Probability in all this: But it is rather Time to conclude our preſent Conference. If we grow more minute, we ſhall grow more trifling; becauſe we cannot talk on ſuch Subjects, beyond a certain Point, with Intelligence.

M. I find I cannot recal all the Queſtions I had a mind to aſk at this Time; only let me obſerve, that

LXXII. One Thing you ſaid a little before, concerning Inſects piercing the Leaves and Gems of Plants, clears up a Particular I did not before underſtand, and relieves me from a Prejudice. I have often been ſurpriſed at thoſe little Berries upon the Back of the Oak-Leaves, ſome red, and ſome a greeniſh white, but did not underſtand their Original: Now I ſuppoſe they are the Excreſcencies raiſed by ſome Inſect wounding the Plant, and leaving its Eggs there.

P. Theſe are raiſed by a black Sort of Fly, of the Shape of a large *Ant*, which is one of

The fifth Conference.

what they call the *Ichneumon* Kind. If you had viſited thoſe Berries through the ſucceeding Winter (for they ſtick on the Leaves during that whole Seaſon) you would have ſeen the ſeveral Advances of the Formation of the Inſect. It becomes a clear whitiſh Maggot, not unpleaſant to look at; which about the Month of *March* eats its Way out of Confinement: And then you may perceive thoſe Berries, each with a Hole exactly round in it, through which the Inſect creeps out. You will frequently ſee alſo ſuch Swellings on the Back of the Willow Leaf, but broader.

M. I know now likewiſe what to think of thoſe Worms I have found in *Peaſe*, *Raſp-Berries*, and even *Nuts*, which before I was at a loſs how to account for. I have often heard that Maggots breed ſpontaneouſly in Fleſh, or any Thing that begins to putrify; and was not ſure but theſe might have been bred the ſame Way.

P. It is now diſcovered, *Matho*, by the moſt *accurate Enquirers*, that there is no ſuch Thing in Nature as this ſpontaneous or equivocal Generation you mention. Every Inſect, how minute and contemptible ſoever it may appear to us, is produced, by a regular Proceſs, from others of the ſame Species. If no Plant, the moſt imperfect, riſes unleſs from a Seed of the ſame Kind, it is not to be imagined that a regular Courſe of Nature ſhould not be as conſtantly obſerved in the Propagation of Animals. It is true, after we have diſcovered the

Nature of Matter to be what it is, we muſt be certain that no Plant, or Animal, could be produced without the immediate Power of the Creator, whether raiſed from a Seed or not: But leſt we ſhould be ſtumbled by our own Inattention, the Deity hath taken Care, (if I may ſo ſay) that the firſt *Stamina* of every Production ſhould have paſſed through infinite Art, before it come within our Ken. Hence we cannot but revere the *Divine Wiſdom* and *Goodneſs*, in putting it thus out of our Power to doubt.——Fleſh of any Sort, if it be carefully covered up, ſo that no Inſect can get at it, to lay its Eggs there, will never verminate or breed living Creatures, as hath often been tried. There are indeed ſome dubious Appearances, that ſeem at firſt to favour irregular Generation: But when Circumſtances are cloſely conſidered, the Difficulty diſappears.

The fi
Conferer

M. What Appearances are there?

P. As the *leſſer Inſects* are extremely productive of their Kind, they are conſtantly depoſiting their Eggs in all Places where they may be hatched and fed; on *Herbs*, *Fiſh*, *Fleſh*, *Liquors*, and the *Bodies* of other Animals. This occaſions Abundance of equivocal Appearances. Hence it comes to paſs that ſome Sorts of Inſects are hatched on the Bodies of living Animals as Vermin; the Eggs being depoſited on theſe by the *Parent-Inſect*. There are few larger Animals that are not thus infeſted with a particular Sort of *Inſect-Vermin*,

The fifth Conference.

especially when lean, and in bad Caſe, juſt as it was in Plants. And the Bodies of dead Animals afford a convenient *Nidus* for the Eggs of others. The Caterpillar laid up to be turned into the *Chryſalis* of its Kind, having been punctured by other Inſects, has bred a Neſt of Maggots of a different Species, inſtead of advancing in the regular Proceſs: And I have ſeen a living Inſect, on being taken out of the Water, void another of a Tribe not at all related to it.

M. Theſe are equivocal Appearances indeed, enough to ſtumble one, who is not aware of this Manner of Conveyance.

P. As Water itſelf, Graſs, Herbs, Fruits, and even Liquors, abound with the Eggs or Spawn of Creatures of different Forms; it is no Wonder that Worms of various Kinds ſhould be bred in the Inteſtines and other Parts of larger Animals; having been conveyed thither with their Food and Drink.

M. It is not: The Wonder rather is, I think, that other larger Animals are not eaten up with an internal Vermin, thus conveyed into their Bodies. This makes me reflect on what you ſaid before, *That an Army of Inſects might be more terrible than the Lion or the Tyger*, and that more Ways than one. I now plainly ſee, that the leaſt and weakeſt Creatures in Nature might prove too ſtrong for the greateſt, and devour them ſafely, having thus got into their Bowels.

P. Nor

P. Nor is it at all wonderful, that Creatures hatched in ſuch unnatural Circumſtances ſhould degenerate and vary from their ſpecifick Size and Figure. Nature (to ſpeak ſtill in the common Phraſe) deſigns every Thing regular in its Kind: But Accidents may prevent Nature; and therefore *Accidents only occaſion what is preternatural and monſtrous.*

M. Make this a little plainer.

P. If the Young of any Species whatever ſhould be brought forth, with any Part of the Body double or ſuperfluous, that is a Token that Nature deſigned two; but ſome external Cauſe or Violence diſturbed the natural Formation, and blended both into one. And it is equally conceivable, that by ſuch violent Diſturbance a Limb may be diſplaced or wanting: For the *Fœtus* being then tender and ductile, the Vegetation or Growth proceeds in different Manners.

M. I underſtand: It is as eaſy to conceive this, as that *Children* ſhould grow deformed, or irregularly ſhaped, by a Fall, or ſome Accident, even after they are born. A Tree, or the Fruit of it, might be made to grow in various Shapes, I ſuppoſe; if it were gently trained from the natural Bent, when flexible and tender.

P. You are in the right. Now if a Child ſhould be born without Legs, or without Arms, (Inſtances of which have been) taking the external Violence or Accident into the reckoning; it is juſt as natural, as that a Man ſhould

The fifth Conference.

have a *Cicatrice* upon his Body after a Wound or Sore; or as that he ſhould have but one Leg after the other hath been ſhot away.

M. What you ſay of having the Parts of the Body double, brings to my Mind the famous Story of the *Twins* in the Reign of *James* the Fourth of *Scotland*, which thus appears not impoſſible at leaſt.

P. Theſe Brothers having lived twenty eight Years, and having been taught Muſick, *&c.* makes it hard to ſuppoſe the Relation fabulous.

M. Hence, I think, we may account why more of the human Species are deformed or monſtrous, than of any other Species: For being weaker both before and after Birth, and depending longer on the Care of others, they muſt be more liable to Accidents. From theſe Conſiderations I can eaſily believe, that monſtrous Productions happen from ſome external Cauſe or Violence.

LXXIII. *P.* This then prevents in a great Meaſure what I was going to ſay; and will help you to account for many ſtrange Appearances of Animals, bred in ſeveral Parts of the Bodies of other Animals, without allowing either equivocal Productions in Nature, or a Want of Superintendance in the Formation of the Bodies of Animals. Worms of an unuſual Length and Shape have been bred in the Inteſtines of ſome Perſons; which, in other Circumſtances, muſt have been of the ſpecifick

ſpecifick Size and Figure. Inſtances hereof you will meet with in Authors of unqueſtionable Veracity: But it would indeed be trifling, to be more particular here in the Application.

M. This Way of accounting for what may appear *monſtrous* is both natural and intelligible.

P. Conſider, that either the Vegetation of animal Bodies muſt go on, notwithſtanding *unuſual Poſitions*, or the Diſturbances the *Semina* may meet with; or, that the *Author of Nature* muſt ſuſpend *the Courſe of Nature*, whenever ſuch Accident happens, which muſt make the Courſe of Nature quite precarious. In ſhort the *Exception* here is in Conſequence of the *general Rule*.

M. I ſee very well, that the State of the human Body itſelf would be altogether uncertain, if, as often as any external Violence happened, either before or after Birth, the Growth and Vegetation of it were at an End. Every *Hurt* or *Accident* muſt then prove mortal. It is as if we ſuppoſed a Tree would not grow, but according to one preciſe Shape.

P. Theſe are liable to ſo many external Violences, that we find a diſtorted Shape in them, is not reckoned at all extraordinary: And if we conſider preternatural Formations of any animal Body in this View, they are ſo far from being Arguments againſt a Providence, that (as has been ſaid) taking in the ſupervening Accident into the Account, they are produced in Conſequence of the ſettled Courſe of Nature. — It is, perhaps, ſcarce worth

The fifth Conference.

worth while to take Notice, that the *Similitudes* between Parents and Children might be alledged as an Objection to ſome Things we have ſaid: But the Diſſimilitudes prove as much, at leaſt, the one Way, as the Similitudes do the other. Both are caſually ſuperinduced, long after the *ſeminal Stamina* are completed, and by quite a different Cauſe from what ſuch Objection would ſuppoſe. If it were not ſo, all the Individuals of every Species would be exactly like.——And now, I hope, we have done for this Time, *Matho*.

M. I am juſt ready to leave you, *Philon*; and after this Converſation, wherever I am, I ſhall always be leſs alone, than otherwiſe I ſhould have been.

P. All we have ſaid can only ſerve to ſet your Thoughts at Work, and put you upon making your own Obſervations.

M. I find already, that is no ſmall Article in any Part of rational Life: And on this Account I was reſolved to aſk your Advice, if it might not be to the Purpoſe to get a Set of good *Microſcopes*, and to learn to manage them myſelf.

P. It would not, indeed, be improper: Your Eyes are good, and to make Obſervations, though equally inſtructive with the moſt ſerious Study, is as pleaſant Diverſion as any young Perſon can deſire: For the Microſcope, *Matho*, is really like an *Inchantment*; it opens new Proſpects in the moſt ordinary and neglected Objects, and often diſcovers ſurpriz-

ing Sights, where we thought there was nothing but what we knew. In Vinegar, where one expects to ſee nothing beſides the Liquor itſelf; or in Water, wherein Ginger, Pepper, or ſome ſuch hot Spice hath been ſteeped, the Microſcope diſcovers inconceivably ſmall *Animalcula*, of different Sorts, ſwimming up and down: Whence it is reaſonably inferred, that the Air itſelf is, in the Summer Months, full of inviſible living Creatures. The Confer

M. How is it known that theſe Animalcula were not originally in the Water?

P. If the ſame Water be kept covered from Communication with the open Air, no ſuch Creature can be ſeen in it. And ſuch diminutive *Things* could neither creep, nor move upon any dry or ſolid Body: So that they could have no Motion, but in the Air, or in ſome Liquor.

M. That Conſideration ſeems to put the Point out of Doubt. But what ſhould bring them to Water thus prepared?

P. The ſtrong *Odor* invites them to repoſite their Eggs in ſuch Liquor.

M. This diſtreſſes the Imagination, to conceive an organized Body, with Difference of Parts fit for Life and Motion, wrought up in ſuch narrow Bounds. You had Reaſon to ſay that the Beginnings of animal Life are carried far beyond the Reach of our Faculties. And then how ſmall muſt the *Particles of Odor* be, which they can ſmell! Whether we go upward or downward, in the Works of Nature, all

The fifth Conference.

all is amazing! We may know a little about the Middle, but cannot come near either of the Extremes.

THE

Sixth CONFERENCE.

Conſequences from the Subject of the laſt Conference. That it doth not belong to any Power to make Matter a ſelf-moving Subſtance: Such Suppoſitions proceed from our Ignorance, in joining together in our own Imagination inconſiſtent Effects. The Folly of appealing to Omnipotence in ſuch Caſes, or where other Proofs may be had, which are more within our Reach. Hence all the Motions in the Univerſe are owing immediately to an immaterial Cauſe. Of the ſeveral Motions in the animal Body, on each of which Life depends. The various Motions produced by the Deity in vegetable and animal Bodies, may be called mechanical, *becauſe of their Conſtancy and Regularity, and the infinite Fineneſs of the Effect. Of ſpontaneous Motion. The greateſt Part of ſpontaneous Motion mechanical in this Senſe. Two diſtinct Powers, or two different* Motives *concur to produce ſpontaneous Motion. Of the human and brute Soul. The moſt perfect Brutes irrational: Nothing*

more

more confirms this Opinion, than the Objections that are brought againſt it. Of Reaſon *and* Inſtinct. *The wonderful Nature of Inſtinct. This the Connexion between the vegetating and animated Parts of the Scale of Being. The Miſery it muſt be to Mankind, if Brutes reaſoned. The different Structure of Body does not make the human Soul rational. Eternal Truths diſcover to us, immediately and by themſelves, an eternal Intellect,* &c.

LXXIV. *M.* I AM afraid you'll think me a little inconſtant, *Philon*; ſince ſometimes I viſit you in a few Days, and ſometimes not till after ſeveral Weeks. The ſixth Conference.

P. One who knows the Uſe of Time ſo very well, *Matho*, will always be profitably employed, and in one Place as much as another: But I hope you have been well all the while.

M. Well, I thank Heaven; and ſo much the better, as our laſt Conference has afforded me great Pleaſure ſince I left you.

P. In what, pray?

M. When I walk abroad, I can hardly ſee any Thing, *Bird*, *Beaſt*, or *Vegetable*, but what offers me ſome Subject to exerciſe my Thoughts upon. You have directed my *unmeaning Curioſity* to a conſiſtent End; and I hope I am leſs in Danger, than formerly, of falling into that irkſom State of growing weary of myſelf.

P. The

The ſixth Conference.

P. The Mind of Man is an *active, reſtleſs Being, Matho*; and it is of no ſmall Conſequence in rational Life, (as you obſerved) to furniſh it with proper Matter to work upon; to accuſtom it betimes to fall eaſily into a conſiſtent and uſeful Train of Thought: But it appeared from many Things you ſaid when laſt here, that this Occupation is not new to you. I muſt in Juſtice therefore refuſe the Compliment you make me. *Curioſity* is an excellent Quality, which Nature does not make ſo ſtrong in the human Mind, and eſpecially in young Perſons, for no Purpoſe: And I ſee, from the preſent Inſtance, that it ſometimes finds out its own Way.

M. It will always be better for Direction in any Caſe, though I own it is a fine Handle; and by it there is a certain Dexterity, I conceive, in leading People, ſo that they ſhall ſeem to guide themſelves: This, I ſuppoſe, is the natural Uſe you meant might be made of it?

P. I either meant it, or you have put a right Meaning on what I ſaid at a Venture.

M. Pray be a little more explicite; the Point ſeems to deſerve it.

P. Things appear to me thus. We are at firſt innocent Creatures, without Experience, but with an unbounded Stock of Curioſity. The Mind is then in the ſame State, as the Body was in the Womb, capable of being moulded either crooked or ſtraight. We are attentive to what paſſes within our Obſervation. Hence the firſt Examples have a prodi-

gious

gious Influence upon us. They are the Models held out to our Imitation in like Circumſtances. Theſe we muſt think juſt and natural, as we know not another Way of Action. What is told us we firmly believe, being without Suſpicion and without Art. From this you will ſee how early the human Mind may be tainted. If after this we endeavour to reclaim young People, once thus perverted, only by the Methods of *Pain* and *Terror*, we treat them not like reaſonable Beings, and are ſevere on others for our own Fault. If they ſhould eſcape this firſt Danger, and the *Infant-Habits* of Virtue (if I may be allowed the Expreſſion) are once ſettled, that *ſtrong Curioſity*, ſo natural to a Mind unfurniſhed, gives us all the Command over them we ought in Reaſon to deſire. All the remaining Part of Life has leſs Hazard in it (bating particular Accidents) as the young Perſon has now ſome Stock, and can do ſomething in his own Defenſe: But a Child is at the Mercy of every bad Example. ——Thus much in Compliance with your Deſire. To purſue Things more minutely would be needleſs.

M. From your beginning in this Manner, I eaſily ſee through the whole; and it ſeems you charge the future Miſcarriages of young People on the Miſ-conduct of the old.

P. The more I may be miſtaken in this Caſe, ſo much the better. But to return to our Subject.——As you have been conſidering the Objects that fell under your Obſervation, what

The ſixth Conference.

what are your Thoughts now of that Variety of Species and Individuals, which are wrought out of the ſame common dead Subſtance?

M. If my Capacity were greater, I find my Admiration muſt be heightened in Proportion: But concerning this Particular, I have a Queſtion to propoſe to you.

P. I ſhall be glad to hear it.

M. If the Reaſon, why the Deity hath ſhewn ſo much *Power* and *Wiſdom* in the Fabrick of the Univerſe, was to repreſent theſe Perfections to rational Beings, legible in ſuch an inert Thing as Matter; and ſince we are not able to fathom the Depth and Variety of the Contrivance, nor the Extent of the Power employed in the Works of Nature; pray tell me for whoſe Uſe and Contemplation are thoſe hidden Miracles reſerved? Many of theſe in the cœleſtial Bodies we cannot reach, becauſe of the Diſtance; and many more, though near and round us, are as inacceſſible, becauſe of the Multiplicity and concealed Fineneſs of the Art. And yet it muſt be inexpreſſibly pleaſing and inſtructive to the *rational Nature*, to ſee and admire theſe ſecret Myſteries of Wiſdom and Power: And therefore to wiſh to know them, ſeems not to be an idle Curioſity, but a rational Deſire. We can have no reaſonable Deſires, I think, but what were deſigned to be gratified.

P. You

P. You put the Queſtion pretty ſtrong, *Matho*; and it ſeems to import ſomething not commonly attended to. I agree with you, that ſuch Retirement of Art from mortal Eyes cannot be without ſome great and rational Purpoſe: We can diſcover nothing as far as our Faculties enable us to go, but what is uſefully and wiſely deſigned: And to imagine that all beyond our Reach was void of Purpoſe and Deſign, would be an abſurd and injurious Notion. I likewiſe agree with you, that the Deſire of knowing thoſe hidden Operations of the Power and Knowledge of the *Creator* muſt be rational: We are inevitably led into it, as we improve our rational Faculties. To this alone are owing all the late Improvements in the Knowledge of Nature. It would be a ſtrange Degeneracy in a rational Being, not to wiſh (at leaſt) to know thoſe Diſcoveries, and after them others, *&c.* But it may perhaps be more proper to think of this afterward; in order to draw from it ſomething ſolid and juſtifiable in right Reaſon.

M. Let it be ſo.——

LXXV. To purſue then the Subject of our laſt Conference; beſides the Art in moulding and contriving ſuch a Diverſity of Things out of the ſame common Subſtance, the manifold Motions, which we ſee continually excited in them, ſeem to merit a more particular Conſideration. I do not mean the Motions of

The ſixth Conference.

the heavenly Bodies; theſe are ſo plainly the immediate Work of the Deity, that no Man can doubt about them: Nor do I mean the leſs perceptible Motions in Vegetation, though theſe are more intricate: For there is nothing here except inert Matter; no living Creature to aſſiſt in producing the Effect. But the Motions of Men and all Sorts of Animals are extremely more difficult and perplexing.

P. If you are ſatisfied that Matter reſiſts all Change of its preſent State, you muſt be equally ſatisfied that all Motion is excited in Matter by an immaterial Cauſe.

M. I am fully convinced of it; but it is ſtill too general, and does not touch the Caſe I want to be informed in.

P. I am afraid it will fatigue you, *Matho*, to ſpeak particularly of the ſpontaneous Motions of Animals, or even of that which is in Vegetation; as a tedious Diſpute would be raiſed on this Head, which it is ſcarce worth while to enter into; and yet it requires ſome Trouble to diſcuſs it.

M. You take the ready Way to make me more inquiſitive; I would not willingly leave an Objection behind me; and I thought I had already gone to the Bottom of all Diſputes concerning Matter. Its Inertia or Inactivity is not denied.

P. Not directly; but ſome have had recourſe to the Power of an *Almighty Being*, to beſtow on Matter, if he pleaſed, not only the

the Power of Vegetation, but alſo of Motion and Thought.

M. It is meant, I preſume, that Omnipotence could have made Matter a ſelf-moving Subſtance?

P. And a ſelf-directing Subſtance too.

M. If it moves itſelf, it muſt likewiſe direct itſelf; the one includes the other: Motion in no Direction is not to be underſtood. And then, I ſuppoſe, it muſt be maintained that every Atom is an intelligent Being: For Power without Intelligence is but *mere Temerity*; and *blind unguided Motion* (as you ſhewed me before) could produce nothing but infinite Diſorder and Confuſion.

P. It is not ſaid that every Atom muſt be an intelligent Being; though the Argument you advance muſt bring this Hypotheſis, I think, to that Concluſion.

M. If every Atom does not direct itſelf by its own Intelligence, it muſt be ſuppoſed to move itſelf by its own Power, and to be conſtantly directed by a ſuperior Power and Knowledge. Does this ſave the Deity any Trouble?——Beſides, every Change of Direction requires a Force to be impreſſed, as much as the firſt exciting of the Motion. Does not this ſuppoſe a Force to be impreſſed on Matter by an immaterial Cauſe, while yet it is ſuppoſed to move itſelf, without an immaterial Cauſe? This ſeems to be inconſiſtent. Could a Body give itſelf the conſtant Change of Direction, in deſcribing a circular Orbit

The fifth Conference.

round a Center, on this Suppoſition, more than if it were ſuppoſed void of ſuch Power?

P. Things are not conſidered in this minute Manner; nor is the Suppoſition extended to the Motions of the Planets.

M. And yet the Motions of the Planets are far more ſimple and uniform than the Motions of Animals, or the Motions in the Vegetation of Plants. If Matter could perform by itſelf the latter Sort of Motions, could it not much more perform the former? —— And then might it not do all that is done in Nature? And laſt of all, is this any Thing leſs in its Conſequences, than laying aſide the Deity altogether?

P. But you do not conſider, *Matho*, that Matter is ſuppoſed to be endued with this Power by an *Almighty Being*.

M. But how does one, who thinks Matter any way capable of all this mighty Power, know that there is an Almighty Being, or any other Almighty Being than Matter, if I may ſpeak ſo without Impiety? If we once ſuppoſe it poſſible that Matter may do all that is done in Nature, we loſe after this all the Arguments for the Exiſtence and Providence of a Deity, taken from the Order and Government of the material World; becauſe Matter may do all this, and might have done it all from Eternity: Nay, we loſe all Arguments taken from any Thing whatever, becauſe Matter may be a *thinking Being*.

P. It

P. It is not ſuppoſed that Matter may do all that is done in Nature; nor is it intended to carry the Argument ſo far.

M. If Matter may have the Power to form a *Plant*, or an *Animal*, or to *think*; what greater Effects are done in Nature? Nor does it depend on one who frames a Suppoſition, to ſettle how far it ſhould be carried; he ought rather to conſider how far an Adverſary may carry it by legitimate Conſequences.

P. But ſtill it is aſſerted that this Power could only be imparted to Matter by an *Almighty Being*.

M. Then you muſt prove an *Almighty Being* prior to this Power, which is allowed poſſible in Matter; that is, without having recourſe to this Power, which is juſt what I ſaid before. You muſt likewiſe prove it utterly impoſſible that this Power, which, it is ſuppoſed, may be in Matter, ſhould belong to the Nature of Matter itſelf. That is, as it appears to me, you muſt ſhew an Inconſiſtency between the Nature of Matter, and this Power, and yet ſuppoſe them conſiſtent at the ſame Time, unleſs you would ſay that Matter endued with this Power loſes it's Nature.

P. You have at laſt gained the Point, *Matho*, and are certainly in the right. If we once ſuppoſe an *Almighty Being* to have endued Matter with this all-performing Power, we cannot, after that, make uſe of this Power, which we allow may be in Matter, as a *Medium* to prove the Exiſtence of that Almighty Being. This is called a *Circle* in reaſoning;

The ſixth Conference.

or the Suppoſition that the Deity does this is the only Proof of his Exiſtence in ſuch Hypotheſis. Nor (as you ſubjoin) will they find it eaſy, after granting that this Power may be conſiſtent with the Nature of Matter, to ſhew it abſolutely impoſſible to have belonged to the Nature of Matter originally. Which, nevertheleſs, is the only Method they have left to ſhew a different Origin of the Power.

M. Beſides, this ſeems to me to ſet the Almighty Power of the Deity, and what I take to be demonſtrative Truth, at Variance. Would not appealing thus to Almighty Power affect all Truth?

P. Carried to the greateſt Height it would: But it is impoſſible to ſet the Power of the Deity in Oppoſition to Truth. You may perhaps ſee hereafter, that to ſet the Power of the Deity at Variance with Truth, would be to ſet the Deity at Variance with himſelf.

M. To bring in Almighty Power then, where other Proofs may be had, is to leave the Methods of Knowledge within our Reach, and raiſe Methods of Knowledge above our Capacity. This can have no other Tendency than to keep the Point from ever being determined.

P. The Obſervation is juſt; it is by the Light of the Sun we ſee all other Objects: But looking directly at the Sun himſelf dazzles our Eyes, and hinders us from ſeeing what we might perceive by his reflected Splendor. However, as the Suppoſition was raſh and ill underſtood, it is needleſs to dwell longer on the Examination of it.

M. Nay,

M. Nay, *Philon*, I beg you would not leave it ſo abruptly. I have hitherto only ſeen the bad Conſequences of it, but not the formal Way how to obviate them.

LXXVI. *P.* In order then to perceive the Unſkilfulneſs of appealing to Almighty Power in ſuch Caſes, we muſt go a little farther back, and obſerve, that ſome of thoſe People called *School-men* have been fooliſh enough to make it a Queſtion, *Whether the Deity could not perform a Contradiction?* This, indeed, if true, would affect all Truth, and introduce an univerſal Scepticiſm, by calling in the Help of Omnipotence! For if a Contradiction could be true, it could not be the Mark of what is falſe; and we could not be ſure but that it might be true in every Caſe. Nay, two contradictory Propoſitions might (for the ſame Reaſon) be both true: And then every Thing might be both true and falſe. In which Caſe all Truth is loſt. This is the Iſſue of bringing in *Almighty Power* to ſuch a Purpoſe! Now, with reſpect to ſuch Sort of Suppoſitions, the Caſe ſtands thus.——An Almighty Being can certainly perform whatever is the Object of real Power: But if the Performance of any Thing be repugnant to itſelf, or if one Part of the Performance ſuppoſes the Non-performance of the other; as for Inſtance, to cauſe that any Thing ſhould exiſt, while it is not; or to make a Thing to be, and not to be, at once; or to make a *Part* greater than the

The ſixth Conference.

Whole, of which it is only a Part, *i. e.* to make it a Part, and not a Part, at the ſame Time: I ſay, if the Performance of any Thing be thus repugnant to itſelf, it is not the Object of any Power, but only an abſurd uniting of *inconſiſtent Acts* in our Conception; or rather, the expreſſing their Union in our Language; for ſuch Repugnancies cannot be conceived.

M. This Solution is both rational and ſatisfactory; for that would be to demand that the Deity ſhould not do a Thing, while he does it; or make a Thing both *nothing* and *ſomething* at the ſame time: An Abſurdity more like the wild Ravings of a delirious Brain, than Reaſon or common Senſe.

P. It is, indeed, to bid the Deity, who is the *Supreme Reaſon*, ſhew himſelf abſurd, or make himſelf a Liar, or deſtroy his own Power, or contradict his infinite Perfections, or join our Folly to his own Omnipotence. What elſe is it, when they ſuppoſe the ignorant Inconſiſtencies of their own Fancy the Objects or the Meaſures of infinite Power and Wiſdom?

M. And this ſilly Miſtake, I preſume, is at the Bottom, whenever we ſeem to doubt, whether the Deity cannot perform a Contradiction?

P. You ſee it muſt.——Now, to come to the Difficulty, if you can ſhew a Repugnancy in the Suppoſition, That Matter ſhould of itſelf change its State from Reſt to Motion, or from Motion

Motion to Reſt, or give itſelf a new Direction, the Thing is done, and you may juſtly infer, that whatever Motions exiſt in Nature were produced, or are renewed, by the Power of an immaterial Being, without leaving a Poſſibility for a contrary Suppoſition.

M. That, I apprehend, is, in effect, already done. It was ſhewn, that Matter, inſtead of effecting a Change of State in itſelf, neceſſarily reſiſts all Change of State, as it is a ſolid Subſtance; and that this Reſiſtance to a Change of its preſent State is the only Means whereby it can be made to do any Thing, or be of any Uſe in Nature. For when we ſuppoſed it not to reſiſt, we ſaw it could do nothing for want of Force or Strength to continue in its Motion, or in its Reſt. It could ſuſtain no Force or Impreſſion, and therefore it could not gravitate, or have Tendency to a Center. Tendency to a Center ſuppoſes a determined Force impreſſed upon, and retained by it, which would carry it thither. It could not bear the Shock, or the Contact of other Matter; therefore it could not ſuſtain that conſtant Impreſſion which is in the Coheſion of Parts. Each Side would yield to the Impreſſion, or rather without bearing the Impreſſion, till the whole Subſtance diſappeared, or was really deſtroyed at the very Approach of Force; for the Action in Coheſion is that which effects the Solidity of Matter. So that ſolid Subſtance itſelf does not remain on this Suppoſition. There is nothing but the *Phantom*, the *Shadow*, the *Name*

The fifth Conference.

Name left; ſomething as impaſſive, and as far from Matter, as empty Space itſelf is. In ſhort, ſince all Action of Matter upon Matter, or of *immaterial Power* upon Matter, ſuppoſes a Reſiſtance between its Parts, there is nothing here left, which immaterial Power could work upon, or in which it could produce any Effect; nothing remains in material Nature to be *paſſive*: Or rather, the material Univerſe diſappears. The Bodies of Men, Animals, and Vegetables, all thoſe Wonders you ſhewed me at our laſt Meeting, are loſt: There could be no Power in moving, no Act in forming ſuch an endleſs Variety of different Pieces of Workmanſhip, out of a Subſtance which is not. Does not this Suppoſition cancel all the Inſtances of Power, and Wiſdom, and Goodneſs, which led us into the Knowledge of theſe infinite Perfections in the Deity?

P. It makes terrible Work in truth; and you run the Conſequences very juſtly.

M. The Reſiſtance of Matter, therefore, cannot be leſſened, or taken away, without leſſening, or taking away the Solidity or Uſe of Matter. Contrarily, we ſee that the Reſiſtance of the Parts of particular Bodies was powerfully to be increaſed and made ſtronger, that they might have Firmneſs and Strength enough to ſerve for various Purpoſes. I cannot forget the Confuſions which you ſhewed me, in our firſt Conference, would follow, if all Bodies were hard in Proportion to their Bulk, or ſoft as they are little; or if all Bodies

dies were equally *brittle*, equally *tough*, equally *yielding*, or *fluid*. Now if there could not be different Bodies, or Bodies uſeful for different Purpoſes, but by thus ſuperinducing different Degrees of Reſiſtance, Hardneſs, or Tenacity, above the *general Reſiſtance*, which cannot be increaſed or leſſened, but with the Solidity of Matter: We may from thence ſee how neceſſary this laſt Sort of Reſiſtance is, that Matter might be fit for any Uſe, or, in effect, be ſolid Subſtance. From all this, and more that might be added, it appears to me, that taking away the Reſiſtance of Matter to a Change of its State, is ſuppoſing the Subſtance itſelf to be deſtroyed.

LXXVII. *P.* You need ſay no more; the Point is undeniable, and beyond Controverſy. ——Now theſe Things being premiſed, let me aſk you, could this ſolid Subſtance, which thus neceſſarily reſiſts all Change of State, (whether of Reſt, or moving uniformly forward) *not reſiſt?*

M. It could not certainly *not reſiſt*, (if ſuch Manner of ſpeaking be proper:) For this is to aſk me, *If a Thing could be, and not be, at the ſame Time?* A Contradiction in Terms, the Performance of which is not the Object of any Power, and could imply no Perfection. That Matter ſhould not reſiſt a Change of its State, the Subſtance ought to be deſtroyed: And if the Subſtance were deſtroyed, ſurely it could effect nothing by not reſiſting.

P. But

The ſixth Conference.

P. But could not this reſiſting Subſtance, by ſome Means or other, effect a Change of State in itſelf?

M. By what Means do you conceive it might change its State? Unleſs your Queſtion were more particular, it cannot receive a diſtinct Anſwer. And if the Queſtion cannot be put, without ſuppoſing a Contradiction, it ought not to be put at all.

P. What if an *Adverſary* ſhould ſay, that Matter might change its State, not indeed by Reſiſtance, but by ſome contrary Force or Tendency?

M. What ſhould give it this Force or Tendency? In what Direction ſhould the Tendency to Motion be? A Tendency to move in all Directions at once is abſurd; and a Tendency to move in one particular Direction requires a determining Cauſe. An Effect without a Cauſe is repugnant. Is it ſuppoſed to have this Tendency *always*, or at *ſome times* only?

P. You are too particular and minute, in enquiring into every little Circumſtance.

M. Then, it ſeems, I muſt both frame an Adverſary's Objection, and anſwer it.—Let us ſuppoſe then a contrary Force or Tendency in Matter, and the Conſequences will be, that theſe *two contrary Forces*, the one of reſiſting a Change of its preſent State, and the other of changing that State, ſhould have a Struggle in the ſame Subſtance, which ſhould prevail; though, by the Way, no Man can, I think, conceive

conceive this poſſible. The ſtronger of theſe Forces therefore muſt overcome the weaker, and ſo that one Force only would remain: Or if both Forces were equal, they muſt mutually ſuſpend, or deſtroy each other; and thus no Force, not even that of reſiſting, would remain. Thus we ſee *that the ſame Subſtance is not capable to be the Subject of two contrary Forces or Tendencies*; and the Reſult of the Suppoſition is, *One Force only or none at all.*

The fi
Confere

P. What if they ſhould have recourſe to the *Power of the Deity* at this *Pinch?*

M. What is it they would demand of the Deity in ſuch a Caſe?——That which Reaſon denies them: That he would *do*, and *not do* the ſame Thing, at the ſame Time, for their Sakes? For this is really their Requeſt at the Bottom. They join inconſiſtent Notions in their own Imagination, and then beg of the Deity that he would bear them out in this Diſtreſs: That he would *ſet his Power in Oppoſition to Truth* for once, to gratify thoſe who are ſo reſpectful as to appeal to his Omnipotence. The Deity, as you ſaid, is the *ſupreme Reaſon*, and not a *Refuge* for Abſurdity. Nor is it a ſimple Abſurdity, ſince they contend, not only that a reſiſting Subſtance ſhould *not reſiſt*; but that while it reſiſts, it ſhould overcome its own Reſiſtance: That is (ſince Matter cannot admit a contrary Force to this) that the *Means* of overcoming its Reſiſtance ſhould be the Reſiſtance itſelf.

P. As

The firth Conference.

P. As it appears to me, *Matho*, you have ſifted the Argument in all its Shapes: However, let us ſuppoſe for once, if you pleaſe, that the *two ſtruggling Forces* could, by ſome ſtrange Power or other, be planted in Matter; the *one* of perſiſting in, and the *other* of always changing its preſent State; that we may ſee the Reſult of the Controverſy on this Suppoſition alſo.

M. With all my Heart, though I fancy it cannot be brought to any other Iſſue than before. For as both Forces are ſuppoſed to act always, either the Force of perſiſting in the ſame State muſt prevail, and ſo the oppoſite Force ſhould be without Effect; or this laſt Force muſt prove the ſtronger, and ſo the Body could have no Force to remain in the ſame State, without a conſtant Aſſiſtance from *ſomething immaterial.*

P. You brought the point to the ſame Iſſue I remember in a like Caſe before.

M. It was ſo; for they who maintain this Suppoſition ſhould thus ſhift Sides in the Debate; *viz.* refuſe an *immaterial Power* to effect a change of State in Matter, and yet contend for an immaterial Power conſtantly impreſſed, to aſſiſt Matter to remain without a Change.

P. This would be extremely fooliſh to find in Matter a conſtant Power to change its State, and yet no Power at all to remain without a Change: For if Matter had any Sort of Power, it muſt be that of remaining in the ſame State, as a Change of State requires a different Exertion

tion of Power.——But pray, if this Force of conſtantly changing its State ſhould be thus prevalent, what muſt the Conſequence be? The ſixth Conference.

M. The preſent State would inceſſantly be changing; or a Body could have no State, either of *Reſt* or *Motion*, but a continual turning from the one to the other; which, whatever Way they might endeavour to explain it, muſt be inconceivable. For the Order of Nature, and Conſiſtency of material Things, require ſome certain finite Duration of the State of Reſt, or Motion. And as this Conſequence would take away both *Reſt* and *Motion* out of Nature at once, the thought is monſtrouſly repugnant.—

P. Laſtly, *Matho*, ſince the very Solidity of Matter, and therefore its Reſiſtance, (that is its Tendency to remain in the ſame State) requires the conſtant Impreſſion of *Divine Power*, as we ſaw before; we may ſee alſo that the various Changes wrought in Matter, are but the various Modifications of the ſame conſtant Impreſſion.

M. I ſee the Strength of the Conſequence clearly, and with great Pleaſure. For if the Power of the Deity conſtantly put forth, be the very *Baſis* of the Exiſtence of Matter: The various Operation of that Power muſt be the Cauſe of Matter, as changing the Manner of its exiſting: Or if the Deity be the conſtant Cauſe of the Exiſtence of Matter, he muſt be the Cauſe of its exiſting in different Manners; that is, both of its Motion and its Reſt. What elſe in the univerſal Nature

of

The ſixth Converſe.

of Things could diverſify the Operations of the Power of the Deity, except the Deity himſelf!——I thought I had finiſhed the Conſideration of the Nature of Matter before: But this different View of the Origin and Spring of Motion; and being ſhewn how improper it is to appeal to the Power of the Deity, where other Proofs may be had; does more than reward the ſmall Pains I have taken in going along with you.

LXXVIII. *P.* You will now ſee with Eaſe and Certainty, what we are to conclude concerning the Cauſe of all Sorts of Motions in Nature, excepting the ſpontaneous Motions of Animals, which are indeed more various and intricate, as you obſerved, and require a Difference of Conſideration from thoſe of inanimate Matter.

M. The Cauſe becomes now too plain to admit of farther Diſpute; and the Inſtances of Motion too many to be reckoned up. The ſeveral Motions in the *Heavens*, in the *Earth*, in the *Waters*, in the *Clouds*, in the *Air*, which we breathe, are the immediate Work of the Deity. When we reflect that Life, and the Pleaſure of it, depend on the Changes which thoſe Motions produce, we cannot think upon them without the higheſt Reverence and Gratitude.

P. You have Reaſon to ſay ſo, ſince any one Species of Motion could not be taken out of Nature, without our feeling the Change greatly

The ſi
Conferer

ly to our Diſadvantage. We little conſider that the *Air* and the *Water* might as readily ſtagnate, as be moved: Reſt requires no Variation of Power. Theſe *Elements* then would become *baneful* and *deadly*. If the Vapours did not riſe, Rain could not fall, nor Springs flow, nor Vegetation continue. As to the Motions of the greater Bodies in Nature; every one will eaſily allow that our Earth, for Inſtance, might have had no Motion at all, inſtead of thoſe two wonderfully contrived Motions, which we mentioned before, and which bring about ſuch pleaſant and comfortable Viciſſitudes. Beſides all theſe, the Life of Man and Beaſt conſiſts in manifold Motions, conſtantly performed in the Body, without their Knowledge or Participation: It is ſo eaſy to conceive after what manifold Ways theſe might be interrupted, that it is miraculous how they are continued. If our Life depended only on one Sort of Motion, we ſhould ſoon forget that we were dependent at all; when we ſo little remember our manifold, and really innumerable Dependences. So that I agree with you, *we cannot ſeriouſly reflect on the ſeveral Species of Motion in Nature, without the higheſt Reverence and Gratitude.*

M. Pray let me know ſomething concerning thoſe internal Motions conſtantly performed in the Bodies of Animals, without their Knowledge and Participation?

P. I cannot ſpeak of thoſe Things, *Matho*, of which I know ſo little, without injuring

The ſixth Conference.

the Subject; and therefore I cannot convey to you thoſe juſt and lively Notions, nor raiſe in you that Admiration, which the Particulars deſerve.

M. I do not expect a juſt Repreſentation of thoſe Matters; but only ſuch general Hints, as may let in the firſt Glimpſe of Light on the dark and ignorant Mind.

P. Why then to huddle up the Thing at once, All is Motion in the animal Body, from the firſt throwing in the *Aliment* into the Stomach, 'till it is at laſt, by various Changes and as various Ways, conveyed to all Parts, in Order to recruit and maintain the whole: Nor even there does the Motion ceaſe, for thoſe Supplies are quickly thrown off again, and the Parts are conſtantly to be ſupported in the ſame Manner.

M. I remember you told me before, that *Perſpiration* occaſioned a conſtant Waſte and Decay of the Body, and I am apt to believe it. For if, in adult Perſons, the Parts were conſtantly recruited from the Aliment, without Loſs of what they had formerly received they muſt ſoon grow to an enormous Bulk, and become an intolerable Burthen: And if they loſt nothing, they would not need, I think, any new Recruit, or the Animal require Food.

P. What you ſay ſeems reaſonable; the former Supplies are thrown off, whether the Parts receive new Support, or not: You ſee how ſoon a Perſon may be emaciated by Sickneſs

or

or Diſeaſe, and worn to a very Skeleton. And The ſ
either the ſolid Parts of the Body thus fly off Confer
by inſenſible Perſpiration, or they muſt bear a leſs Proportion to the Fluids than is commonly ſuppoſed: For in ſuch Caſes, the brawny, muſcular, and firmeſt Part of the Fleſh diſappears.

M. Methinks I perceive from this, how the Body might be ſupported without Food.

P. The *Author of Nature*, *Matho*, can eaſily ſuſpend the Courſe of Nature, which he inſtituted arbitrarily, without receiving Laws from the Materials he wrought with. An immortal Body is no more a Paradox, than an immortal Soul.——

M. But you made a wide Step, from the firſt throwing in of the nutritive Subſtance, to its being at laſt thrown off in this Manner: Tell me ſomething of the intermediate Changes and Motions. What becomes of it after it is thrown into the Stomach?

P. Being bruiſed with the Teeth, and mixed with the *Saliva*, it paſſes to the Stomach, where it is digeſted.

M. How is Digeſtion performed?

P. The groſſer Parts of the Food are ſtill made finer, by the conſtant *Attrition*, or *Rubbing* of the Sides of the Stomach upon them; 'till by this Action, by the natural Heat, and fermenting Juices, they are concocted and brought into a new Form, fitter for moving through the narrow *Meatus's*, which they muſt paſs, in order to be conveyed to the Blood.

M. How is it known that the Stomach hath ſuch a conſtant Motion as this?

P. Such a Motion is neceſſary in the Stomach on another Account; namely, for thruſting out the Aliment, ſo digeſted, into the *Inteſtines:* And *Nature* attains more Ends than one, by the ſame Means. *Granivorous Birds*, being without Teeth, for Comminution of the Grain, ſwallow little rough Stones, and Gravel, to aſſiſt this Grinding or Attrition: It is this Action (they ſay) which occaſions the Pain we feel in Hunger; and ſome have computed the Force of the Stomach in this Action to be incredibly great.

M. By what Means is this conſtant Action of the Stomach continued?

P. I might tell you of the *Elaſticity* of its Fibres; or their alternate relaxing and reſtoring themſelves; but it is the ſhorter Way, to own I do not know.

M. And as inſtructive too, I think, as to tell me that the Action of the Stomach is owing to the Action of its Fibres.——What becomes of the digeſted Aliment, when it is thrown out into the Inteſtines?

P. It is thrown out gradually: The feculent and excrementitious Parts are protruded, by *another conſtant Motion*, along the various and mazy Folds of the Guts, to be at laſt quite thrown off; and by this Action, the finer and nutritious Subſtance is forced into certain ſmall Veins (called *lacteal Veins)* appointed for receiving it.——But here again, *Matho*, we

we are in danger of becoming too minute and particular; which is neither your Buſineſs nor mine. The firſt Conference

M. I ſhall have done immediately; only tell me what Sort of a Motion this of the Guts is?

P. You have obſerved an Earth-worm when it creeps on the Ground?

M. Often.

P. It ſtretches itſelf in Length, and becomes ſmall, by extending its *longitudinal Fibres*; and then contracts itſelf, and becomes groſſer, by dilating its *annual Fibres:* Such a Motion is that of the Inteſtines, only it is equable and conſtant, ſo as to become *wave-like*, or *undulatory*. You may perceive it in ſome tranſparent Animals, by the Help of the Microſcope: And certainly nothing can be more adapted, both for carrying the *Fæces* gradually forward, and forcing the *Chyle* (as it is called) or alimentary Subſtance, to aſcend in the *lacteal Veſſels*.

M. It is, indeed, wonderful, and kind, that a Motion, on which our Life ſo nearly depends, ſhould be conſtant. But why ſhould the Inteſtines fold and turn ſo much, rather than go on in a ſtraight Courſe?

P. They are about ſix Times as long as the whole Body; that is, about ſix and thirty Foot in a Man; and artfully folded up in a ſmall Space, for this very Purpoſe, that all the nutritive Subſtance, or *Chyle*, might in ſome Place or other be taken up into theſe lacteal Veins,

The ſixth Conference.

which are every where placed to receive it in paſſing.

M. This is a notable Contrivance!——For I conceive theſe lacteal Veins could not have been large enough to take it up all at once, or in one Place, without taking up ſome of the *Fæces* along with it; which muſt have obſtructed the End of their Separation.

P. So ſlender are theſe *firſt Lacteals*, that they do not exceed the Capacity of *capillary Arteries*.

M. What becomes of the *Chyle* after this? or whither is it conveyed?

P. It is conveyed by thoſe numerous Veins into one common *Receptacle*, and thence aſcends by one Paſſage to the *left ſubclavian Vein*, (as it is called) as a leſſer Stream falls into a larger: And afterwards it is carried with the circulating Blood, to all Parts of the Body.

M. I have ſeen the Circulation of the Blood, *Philon*, in the finny Tail of a little *Tad-Pole*; and certainly it is a Motion full of miraculous Power! So many Streams of Liquor conſtantly running in a Space not ſo large as a Pin-Head! What you ſaid was very juſt; *The Microſcope is like an Enchantment!* From what you ſay of the *Chyle*'s aſcending to the left Subclavian Vein, I would aſk how a Liquor can flow upward: But pray ſhew me firſt, in what Manner this Circulation is performed; for though I beheld this Wonder with my Eyes, I ſaw it but in one Point.

P. To give you ſome imperfect Idea of it you muſt know, that the Blood is carried from the *Heart* by Arteries, and returns to it by Veins. The *Arteries* proceed from one great Trunk, called the *Aorta*, iſſuing from the left Ventricle of the Heart. This is divided and ſubdivided into innumerable Branches, and capillary Extremities, which terminate in all Parts of the Body, external and internal, wherever it is neceſſary that Blood ſhould be conveyed, or the Parts recruited. The *Veins* begin where the capillary Arteries end; that is, over all the Parts of the Body; and returning, unite ſtill in larger Channels, till at laſt they all meet and form the *Vena Cava*, which opens into the *right Auricle* of the Heart. The Confer

M. Thus far I have a general Notion.

P. The Heart, from the firſt Moment of Life, to our laſt expiring, is in a conſtant alternate Motion, of the Conſtriction and Dilatation of its Cavities, which are called its *Syſtole* and *Diaſtole*.

M. I need not aſk you how this alternate Action is continued for eighty or ninety Years? I know what Anſwer you would give me.——

P. At every Conſtriction of the left Ventricle of the Heart, the Blood is expelled with great Velocity into the *Aorta*, which you may inſtantly perceive in ſeveral Parts of the Body by the *Pulſe*, of which there may be about fourſcore in a Minute. And thus the alimentary Parts of the Food are carried by innumerable Streams to all the Parts of the Body,

The ſixth Conference.

to recruit the Waſtes occaſioned by Perſpiration.

M. I conceive it plainly.

P. Having diſcharged this office, the Blood returns again to the Heart, and is diſcharged into its right Auricle, while that is in its *Diaſtole*, or Dilatation.

M. But I want to know how the Blood flows upward in the aſcending Veins. Water is raiſed up to the Atmoſphere in the Form of Vapor, which cannot be the Caſe here.

P. This I cannot tell you. Many are the Efforts that have been made, to find out a mechanical Power for this Purpoſe; and if they have ſucceeded, ſo much the better. Only thus much is certain, wherever a Liquor runs upward, there are *Valves* diſpoſed in proper Places, opening in the Direction of the flowing Current; but which muſt ſhut if the Liquor ſhould move backward.

M. All this is aſtoniſhing! Here is not one, but numberleſs Circulations, conſpiring to form one great Circulation!

P. Conſider this Figure a little.——It is the Syſtem of the Arteries in the human Body; or of as many of the principal Branches of them as can be expreſſed without Confuſion.

M. I ſee ſome riſing to the Head, Neck, and Shoulders, and extending to the Arms and Hands; and others ſpreading over the Body, and running down to the Thighs, Legs, and Feet: They appear vaſtly numerous.

P. And yet the ten thouſandth Part of them

is

is not, and cannot be repreſented. Their Capillary Extremities cannot be ſeen in other Circumſtances, than you perceived thoſe in the Fin of the little Animal. The Conf

M. It muſt certainly be ſo, if they terminate as numerous in every little Point, as thoſe I beheld there.

P. There is by far more Difference between the greateſt and the leaſt, than between the largeſt *navigable River* and the ſmalleſt *Rill*. ——Here is ſuch another Figure, expreſſing the general Poſition of the larger Veins.

M. I obſerve in this almoſt the ſame Order and Diſpoſition as in the former; ſo that one could not know which were which, unleſs better informed of theſe Things, than from mere verbal Deſcriptions.

P. If then the Body were tranſparent, or the Senſe acute enough to perceive all thoſe innumerable Streams conſtantly flowing, *from all Parts, and to all Parts*; what Sort of a Sight do you think, or what various Motions ſhould we behold!

M. The very Thought fills the Soul with Surprize! The Body itſelf would then appear a Syſtem of ever-flowing Currents, more various and wonderful than thoſe in the largeſt Kindom upon Earth.

P. All this Motion is as real as if we conſtantly beheld it with our Eyes.

M. I have often thought, *Philon*, ſince I began to conſider theſe Things, what ridiculous and affected Creatures the Poets are, who wiſh

The ſixth Conference.

wiſh for a hundred Mouths, and a hundred Tongues, to help them to deſcribe ſome paultry Fiction of their own Brain: It is only in ſuch Caſes as theſe, where one could reaſonably wiſh, that one's Thought and Admiration were a thouſand Times doubled, to be able to purſue *every Wonder*, and think worthily of the Power and Wiſdom manifeſted *in any* of the Works of Nature.

P. The Occaſion would be more juſtifiable, I confeſs. But we muſt leave this Subject, without conſidering the remaining Part of the Circulation; for we have only yet ſpoke of one half of it.

M. Pray what other Half remains?

P. The Syſtole of the right Auricle expells the Blood into the right Ventricle; and the Conſtriction of that Cavity thruſts it into the *Pulmonary Artery*; on the *Lungs* it is ſpread innumerable Ways, and returns by the *Vena Pulmonalis* into the left Auricle, by the Syſtole of which it is forced into the left Ventricle, whence it is again ejected into the Aorta, as at firſt.

M. What is the Uſe of this ſhorter Excurſion of the Blood from the Heart to the Lungs?

P. Though all allow it neceſſary, the Uſe is diſputed; it ſerves probably more Ends than one. The Blood was to be impregnated with freſh Air, which, by the great Preſſure on the Lungs in Reſpiration, ſeems to be forced into it.——The *Reſpiration* itſelf every Body knows to be another *great*, *neceſſary*, and *conſtant*

ſtant Motion in the Body on which our Life no leſs depends, than on any of the other Motions we have mentioned. The Conſe

M. The Conſideration how Life is preſerved, and how many different Conditions are neceſſary, is full of Awe and Wonder! I perceive the Truth of your Obſervation; that *if our Life depended only on one Sort of Motion, we ſhould ſoon loſe all Senſe of our being dependent Creatures.*——But

LXXIX. Pray in the next Place communicate to me ſomething concerning *ſpontaneous Motion.*

P. I muſt firſt acquaint you then, that thoſe Motions we have juſt now been ſpeaking of, where the Deity is the *ſole Mover*, and which are ſo artful and regular, may be called *mechanical*, to diſtinguiſh them from ſpontaneous Motions, which are performed by Men, and other inferior Animals.

M. I perceive the Uſe of the Diſtinction. You call this Sort of Motion *mechanical*, not as if it were the effect of mere Matter, without an immaterial Mover (which is the common Acceptation of the Word) but to mark the Juſtneſs and Regularity of it.

P. For that Reaſon only.——Now, I aſk you, ſince Matter cannot change its State, nor move itſelf; what are we to think of ſpontaneous Motion, or concerning the *Movers* that excite it?

M. This ſeems to me another eaſy Conſequence

The ſixth Conference.

ſequence from the Inactivity of Matter: For if mechanical Motion be above the Power of Matter, ſpontaneous Motion, which riſes above the Laws of Mechaniſm, is a Degree higher above the Power and Genius of Matter, and ſhews plainly that there is in every individual Animal, or ſpontaneous Creature, an immaterial Principle, which is called the *living Soul*, by which theſe Motions are performed.

P. You have touched upon a fundamental Conſideration, which will help to clear up this difficult Affair by Degrees: For in the Motions we have hitherto taken Notice of, the Deity hath reſerved both the *Power*, and the Direction of the Motion entirely to himſelf; or rather (to ſpeak more truly) there was no other Being which could be the Cauſe of this Motion: Therefore the Laws of mechanical Motion are conſtant, and the Effects of it infinitely fine and regular. But as the Scale of Being was to riſe, ſpontaneous Motion (produced by living Beings) was indeed *neceſſarily* to be leſs regular, and to produce leſs wonderful Effects: And yet, ſo far as it receded from the ſtated Laws of Mechaniſm and Regularity, ſo much the more doth it ſhew to us a different Cauſe of Motion, not only from dead Matter (which is no Cauſe) but from the Deity himſelf. And thoſe Creatures which are leaſt perfect have ſo much the more of Regularity in their Works, as there is more of the Deity in theſe Productions, than in thoſe of ſuperior Animals.

M. Inſtances

The ſix Conferen

M. Inſtances of this you ſhewed me at our laſt Meeting; and now I ſee that *ſpontaneous Motions* are ſo far diſtinguiſhed from *mechanical* (i. e. thoſe produced by the Deity) as they are more wild and irregular: Or the Power of the *ſpontaneous Mover* is not conducted by equal Knowledge.

P. You are right; this Want of Knowledge is a wonderful Ingredient in our ſpontaneous Motions; ſo far, I mean, as they are produced by us. The Deity hath granted Animals a Degree (a ſmall Degree) of Power; but hath reſerved the Knowledge of the Method entirely to himſelf. When we excite Motion in any Part of our Body, we act as blindly as the brute Creature. We attain at length a Habit of moving one Part, rather than another, according to our Pleaſure; but know nothing of the ſecret Means by which this is effected. The greateſt Philoſopher on Earth is, in this reſpect, on a Level with the inferior Animals.

M. I never reflected upon this before; and yet the Truth of it muſt be perceived, as ſoon as attended to. We perform theſe Motions before we know any Thing; and the Brute performs them as well as we. And when we come to know more, that does not teach us to perform them better. All is indeed a Habit, we cannot tell how acquired: For the Brutes ſeem to be ſooner Maſters of it than Man.

P. You reaſon juſtly; and we may likewiſe be farther convinced that our own Knowledge has no Share in the Production of ſpontaneous Motion,

The ſixth Conference.

Motion, in that when learned men have applied themſelves with all their Induſtry, to diſcover in what Manner it was performed, how the Command of the Will is ſo juſtly executed, or by what Means the Action comes to be communicated to the immediate Inſtruments of Motion, they have been able to do little more than gueſs ingeniouſly, and often in Contradiction to each other.

M. This is really wonderful, and ſhews us, I think, that *Spontaneity* and *Knowledge* are very diſtinct Principles.

P. You cannot make a juſter Obſervation; and the longer you dwell upon this Subject, you will find it the more confirmed. The brute Species, as you obſerved, are ſooner perfect in ſpontaneous Motion than Man: And certainly we may allow, without Danger of going too far, that they are not quite ſo knowing——Now from theſe broken Hints, you will at length be able to obſerve, *That by far the greateſt Part, even of ſpontaneous Motion, is produced mechanically*; and that the Imperfection we found before in ſpontaneous Motion is not in the mechanical Part of it, but only conſiſts in this, that our Spontaneity is not directed by equal Knowledge. When I move my Hand, the *Muſcles* (as they are called) which produce the mechanical Part of this Motion, act as regularly as the Muſcle of the Heart, in its Syſtole and Diaſtole, where I have no Participation: Yet I cannot produce any ſuch artful Effect, as the Bee, the Spider, or the Silk-worm,

M. That

The ſixth Conference

M. That Part of the Motion muſt be mechanical, with reſpect to us, ſince it is not performed by our Knowledge and Direction.

P. Nay, nor by our Power neither; for as we do not underſtand the Contrivance, ſo we do not afford the Means; and a ſmall Diſorder of the Mechaniſm, we find hinders the Production of the Motion. So that when I move my Hand, I as little ſupply the motive Power, as I do the Motion of my Heart; and that is, as little as I do to the Vegetation of a Plant.

M. This Subject becomes more wonderful at every Step! Here I ſee again, what we obſerved before, when ſpeaking of Matter, that the Deity occurs to us in every Thing, and his Power is the Spring of every Effect. It is above Expreſſion ſtrange, to find it at the Foundation in our ſpontaneous Motions.

P. It muſt be ſo in true Philoſophy, *Matho*; if it appeared otherwiſe, I ſhould ſuſpect you had reaſoned wrong.——And yet, notwithſtanding this, it is certain that the *ſpontaneous*, or *living Being*, both begins, and ſtops the mechanical Motion, and determines it all Manner of Ways, at its Pleaſure. This we are intimately conſcious of, and know we are endued with ſuch Command. When we diſcourſe together (to paſs by other Inſtances) the *ſpontaneous Principle* commands the Motions of the Organs of Speech, in the Articulation of every Syllable: So that the Words formed by this Motion and the internal Thoughts of the Mind

The ſixth Conference.

Mind correſpond, as if the Whole were performed by the ſame *Agent* and *Power*. We can ſcarce conceive a more eaſy and abſolute Command, than the *ſpontaneous Being* hath over the Motion of the Body in this Caſe.

M. Indeed the Command is ſo eaſy, that the greateſt Part of Mankind, I perſuade myſelf, fancy the whole Action to proceed from the ſame Cauſe: So eaſy, that the ſpontaneous Being impoſes on itſelf! And is at the ſame Time quite ignorant how the Motion is performed! This is wonderful! Nor is it leſs wonderful that the Deity ſhould ſubmit his Power to co-operate with the *ſpontaneous Principle* in every living Creature!

P. You ſee his Condeſcenſion in the Formation of the Body of every the minuteſt *Inſect*; and in the ſolicitous Proviſion he makes for the moſt contemptible *Reptile*. But theſe Thoughts would carry us a great Way. He co-operates with all the Actions of Men: The eſtabliſhed Courſe of Nature muſt otherwiſe be inceſſantly ſuſpended; and yet the *Obliquity* and *Error* proceeds from our Thought and Intention only.

M. I preceive there could be no ſettled Courſe of Nature, without this *Co-operation*.

Si, quoties peccant homines, ſua fulmina mittat,

is applicable here: And the Intention would not be leſs criminal, though the Courſe of Nature were conſtantly changed or ſuſpended, to prevent the Effect.

P. This

The ſixth Conference.

P. This is a Caſe then, where both the Wiſdom and the Goodneſs of the Creator is conſpicuous; and yet his Juſtice, as our *Law-Giver*, hath full Power to puniſh.——As to the ready Command which the *ſpontaneous Being* hath over the Motions of the Body, without knowing how theſe Motions are performed, it is certainly wonderful: But we may eaſily be ſatisfied that the Thing is ſo, from a Caſe in ſome Meaſure parallel. A Man by the help of Machinery, or Engines, performs far greater Things than he could otherwiſe do; and if we ſuppoſe him ignorant of the Contrivance or Art, whereby the Machine is made to perform the Effect, but had only learn'd to move a Handle, or certain Part, by which the Whole was ſet a going, neither the Power nor the Knowledge of producing the Effect belonged to him: And yet it could not be denied but that the Man, by ſpontaneouſly moving this Handle, or holding it ſtill, had the Command over the whole Mechaniſm, and over the Effect it produces. Juſt ſo, the *living Being*, though ignorant of the Contrivance and Mechaniſm by which ſpontaneous Motion is performed, both begins and ſtops it, and has a free Command over it.

M. This I perfectly comprehend. A Man who knew nothing of Muſick, might for all that play a Tune, or half a Dozen of Tunes mechanically, on an Inſtrument ſo contrived, merely by turning a Handle. Which ſhews that a ſpontaneous Being may have the full

The ſixth Conference.

Power of exciting, continuing, repeating, or ſtopping a mechanical Motion, which it does not underſtand. Here the *mechanical* and *ſpontaneous* Powers are quite different, and the Effect depends on both Powers acting jointly: For in this Inſtance, the Tune could not be played, if either the Man did not move the Handle, or if the Mechaniſm happened to be diſordered.

P. It is very rightly obſerved. Now, as there are two ſeparate and diſtinct Principles here, concurring to the Production of ſpontaneous Motion; ſince Matter is devoid of all Power, we ſee plainly that both muſt be immaterial, and alſo that the Power and Knowledge of the *one* is infinitely ſmall in Reſpect of that of the *other*.

M. The Conſequences of both are very clear. This Conſideration of two ſeparate and diſtinct Powers pleaſes me extremely, and agrees to Appearances, as it aſcribes the different Parts of ſpontaneous Motion to proper Cauſes. The Soul could not produce the mechanical Parts of ſpontaneous Motion, and know nothing of the Contrivance by which itſelf wrought: Nor could the Deity produce the ſpontaneous Part, and be impeded by a Defect in the Mechaniſm; nor could he feel the Pain and Impotence which the Soul ſuffers under ſuch an Impediment. Whence is diſcovered the extreme Difference betwixt the two motive Powers. If we admit but of Matter, and *one Mover* only; the Motions of Animals are quite unaccountable.

P. And

P. And therefore (as you obſerved in the Beginning) the Argument concludes for an immaterial Principle in every living Thing, Brutes as well as Men: Though there are other Arguments, not applicable to the Souls of Brutes, which ſhews ſeparately, and upon other Accounts, the Immateriality of the rational Soul.

LXXX. *M.* Since both are immaterial, I ſhould be glad to underſtand the Difference between the Brute and human Soul?

P. This is a Point, *Matho*, the Diſcuſſion whereof, as I obſerved to you before, is extremely difficult; for though the Anſwer to your Queſtion might be given in few Words, yet Opinions entirely contrary to each other, and equally abſurd, have ſet Men on perplexing, inſtead of unravelling the Subject. Some Philoſophers will not allow the Brutes to have ſo much as a ſpontaneous or living Principle in them; and others will needs raiſe them to the Dignity of rational Beings.

M. Theſe are in truth very contrary Opinions; but ſo far I think appears already, from what has been ſaid before, that Spontaneity and Knowledge (or Reaſon, as I take it) are very different Things,

P. As different as moſt Things you can name. Few Creatures are defective in Spontaneity, after we paſs thoſe, which, like Plants, are rooted to ſome Place: But Reaſon is a Thing of a ſuperior Nature. In Man himſelf

The ſixth Conference.

the latter of theſe Principles is not near ſo extenſive as the former.—But to come to the Point itſelf, we might leave both the contending Parties to fight it out, were it not for the Conſequences which are applied to the human Soul. We have juſt now ſeen how groundleſs their Opinion is who deny Brutes to have an *immaterial Principle*: And if we would examine Appearances fairly, we could not find juſtifiable Arguments to conclude them rational Beings. It is plain the human Soul has a ſuperior Power to that of Brutes; and if we ſhould call that Power (whatever it be) *Reaſon*, the Controverſy would be at an end.

M. This makes ſhort Work; and ſure I am that Man would be reckoned irrational, and unfit for the Converſation of his Species, who had not more Reaſon than the moſt perfect Brutes; than the *Dog*, the *Ape*, or the *Monkey*, which you reckoned to come neareſt to the Confines of Reaſon.

P. The Obſervation is extremely juſt; and from thence it muſt appear an affected Partiality to ſuppoſe, that the *ſame Talents* ſhould make a Man *brutiſh*, and a Brute *rational*. It is even contradictory to itſelf; for while it would bring down Man to the level of Brutes, it ſuppoſes that more is expected from him as a rational Being: And why ſhould more be expected from him as a rational Being, but on the Suppoſition that Brutes are without Reaſon?

M. This is a plain Inconſiſtency.

P. However,

The ſix Conferen

P. However, that we may ſearch into the Foundation of their Miſtake, pleaſe to obſerve with me, that Reaſon is a *ſelf-improving* Power or Faculty of the Soul, by which Man is capable of great Advancement: And when he neglects to improve his Nature, he becomes indeed brutiſh with reſpect to the reſt of his Species. But ſtill this ſhews the Dignity of Reaſon above the Endowments of Brutes, which, rightly cultivated, ſo eminently advances the human Nature; and it is but poor Sophiſtry to run the Compariſon in this ſtudied Inequality. It is ſaid, *Man differs more from Man, than Man from Beaſt.* Let it be ſo; let the Obſervation be as juſt as they pleaſe: The more true it is, the more it makes againſt themſelves; for it allows that *Reaſon improved* is doubly elevated above the brute Nature.

M. This ſeems very plain; and the only fair Method in this Caſe would be, I think, to ſet the moſt perfect of the brute Species, in Compariſon with the moſt perfect of the human; which would ſhew the Difference of the ſpecifick Faculties in a true Light.

P. That would be to give up the Queſtion at once. We can hardly imagine the Height to which human Reaſon has arrived in ſome Men; in a *Socrates*, a *Plato*, an *Archimedes*, a *Newton*.

M. Pray let me interrupt you, to aſk, Who this laſt Man was? I have often heard him named, but never without Admiration.

P. He was the Glory, *Matho*, not only of

The ſixth Conference.

his Nation, and of the Age he lived in, but the Ornament of the Species itſelf; whoſe wonderful Diſcoveries have advanced true Philoſophy more, and taught us better to admire the Power and Wiſdom of the Creator in the Works of Nature, than thoſe of all the Philoſophers that went before him, or, I'm afraid, will come after him. But for me to enter more particularly on his Character, would be doing myſelf Honour, but that incomparable Perſon none.——To return, if we conſider on the one Side the amazing Improvements the rational Nature is capable of; and on the other, that the Nature of the moſt perfect Species of Brutes is ſtrictly confined to a *certain Limit*, beyond which no Art or Induſtry of Man can raiſe them; it ſeems to point out to us, that the ſpecifick Perfections differ not only in *Degree*, or more and leſs of the ſame Faculty, but in *Kind*; or that they are Powers of different Sorts.

M. It is ſtrange enough, that all of the ſame Species of Brutes ſhould keep ſo conſtantly to the ſame Train of Action; or if they be rational, that they diſcover no new Improvements, nor riſe ſome of them above others, as we ſee it is among Men: And it is but a bad Sign, that they can neither improve by their own Induſtry, nor by the Aſſiſtance of Mankind.——

P. In the next Place let me obſerve to you, That Man may not only not improve his Reaſon, but pervert this improved Faculty to vici-

ous

ous Purpoſes; and then he becomes a *more terrible Monſter*, indeed, than any in the Deſerts of *Africa:* And that this Degeneracy is not obſervable among Brutes ſhews only a Nature nearer to mechanical, and more confined.

M. I ſee the Force of the Conſequence; the leſs Power a Creature has to act, the more uniform and regular its Actions muſt be.

P. Yet this affords thoſe, who willingly miſtake, a large Field to decry the rational Nature, and exalt the Brutes as the more perfect Beings. It it a true Obſervation, *That the Corruption of the beſt Things becomes the moſt hurtful:* But it can be no good Argument to infer from this, that therefore the beſt Things are the worſt; ſince the Truth of the Obſervation depends on their being naturally preferable. *Freedom*, or a Power of *Self-determination*, is a high Privilege, without which there could be no Virtue in the beſt Actions, nor Improvement of our Nature in any Reſpect.

M. It is ſo; for if I am compelled to do a laudable Action, I juſtly loſe the Merit of it, as it proceeds not from a right Diſpoſition of Mind. And if a Creature hath but one Way of acting, the Action can neither be reckoned virtuous nor vicious.

P. That is what I was ſaying: There can be no Merit in Brutes not degenerating, or in their ſteadily purſuing one Train of Action, from which it was not in their Power to deviate.

M. And

The ſixth Conference.

M. And ſo on the contrary, when a Brute Creature does a hurtful Action, it is not reckoned criminal or guilty; though a Man for the ſame Action would be puniſhed, perhaps with the Loſs of Life.

P. It is juſtly obſerved: In ſuch Caſes the common Senſe of Mankind conſtrues them not to be rational, but merely ſenſitive Creatures. And it is remarkable here, that a *Madman* is not reckoned accountable for his Actions, on this very Account; namely, becauſe he is without the Uſe of Reaſon. Which ſeems to be a plain Confeſſion, that Brutes are not rational or moral Agents: For if an accidental or temporal Incapacity deprives a Being of that Denomination, a conſtant and natural Incapacity ought much more to do ſo.——

M. You infer, therefore, the Superiority of the human above the brute Nature, as well from the *Corruption*, as from the *Improvableneſs* of it?

P. Doth it not appear ſo to you?

M. I own I am ſatisfied that this Equality among Brutes, and their not degenerating, is not owing to a right Uſe, but an utter Want of Power in the Brute Soul.

P. We ought then to blame the Man, who might have made a better Uſe of his Reaſon, and not find Fault with the Power which he abuſes: Whereas we juſtify the Man, by laying the Blame upon the Power; that is, in reality, upon the Deity who beſtowed it. In

ſhort,

The ſixth Conference

ſhort, there is a Complication of falſe Reaſoning in this Caſe: We ſuppoſe, and admit, that the neceſſary Nature in Brutes is a moral Perfection in them; then we condemn the moral Corruption and Degeneracy of Man, as a phyſical Imperfection in his Nature and Conſtitution: And from this double Fallacy, we exalt the brute Nature, to the Diſparagement of Reaſon.

LXXXI. *M.* I was pretty well convinced in my own Mind before, that Brutes are not rational Creatures, and am farther confirmed in my Opinion from theſe two Conſiderations you have pointed out, *viz.* That their Natures cannot be improved to any rational Purpoſe, and that they are not liable to the Degeneracy of Mankind: But what ſhall we ſay to many particular Inſtances, which are really ſurprizing, and are brought to ſhew that they reaſon in *ſome Caſes?*

P. Thoſe very Inſtances, *Matho*, render that Side of the Queſtion extremely improbable. Why elſe ſhould they argue from a few, ill-atteſted Particulars, which do not hold when put to the Trial? The Appearances from which we might with Certainty conclude, that brute Beaſts are rational, ſhould be univerſal, and liable to no Exception. If Brutes reaſoned in *ſome Caſes*, what ſhould hinder them from Reaſoning in others? And after all, What is it that makes thoſe Inſtances ſurprizing, but becauſe little is expected from them?

If

The fifth Conference.

If they were thought rational, the Appearances alledged would be looked upon as ſhamefully trifling, and from the Purpoſe: Nay, ſo ſilly are they, that they would then be brought as Inſtances of their Stupidity.

M. I am afraid you will cut off the Objections I had to offer, by theſe previous Conſiderations; the Reaſonableneſs of which notwithſtanding I cannot help owning.

P. By no Means: Propoſe your Objections.

M. What do you think of *Parrots*, *Magpies*, *Starlings*, and other Birds, which are capable of being taught human Language?

P. You yourſelf muſt certainly perceive, that this Inſtance is nothing at all to the Purpoſe. The *Gold-finch* alſo imitates the *Lowing* of a Bull, or the *Neighing* of a Horſe, as *Pliny* obſerves: A Parrot imitates the Barking of a Dog, or, indeed, any Noiſe. This is mere Imitation of Sound. They imitate alſo articulate Sound, but without underſtanding the Senſe. When Parrots learn to pronounce the Words *Whore*, or *Cuckold*, they cannot have the very complex Ideas which theſe Words excite in us. Children themſelves learn Language at firſt in a Manner perfectly mechanical: There is no Connexion either natural or rational, between the Word and the Thing ſignified. And when a Bird learns to imitate the Sound, I cannot ſee how the Knowledge of the Thing ſignified can be communicated to it.

M. Some

The fifth Conference.

M. Some Birds learn a Tune very diſtinctly; which ſhews that they have both Memory, and an Ear.

P. They imitate a Tune pretty diſtinctly for ſuch Creatures: But an Ear is a Thing merely mechanical, even in *Man*, and no Effect of Reaſon at all. If you hear a Tune often ſung or played, ſome Parts of it will return upon you afterward, without your Endeavour to recover it; and in Time the Whole of it will return upon you, and ſtick with you, in the ſame mechanical Manner. When this is ſo in us, it cannot be otherways in them. We endeavour to hit the Note purely in this mechanical Way, and not by Memory, or Judgment: And when they endeavour to hit the Note, it cannot be, I ſuppoſe, in a more perfect Manner.

M. I begin to ſuſpect, indeed, that a *good Ear* is a Thing purely mechanical; and that he who has a better Ear, has not always either a better Memory, or more Judgment than another.

P. We might here obſerve, *Matho*, that the whole Effect of Muſick upon Man himſelf is a Thing entirely mechanical, and has nothing to do with Reaſon: It is thus that ſeveral Sorts of Muſick excite different Paſſions in us; one Air makes us languiſhing and ſad, and another briſk and gay. And the Learned are of Opinion, that nothing is harder to be accounted for, than theſe various and violent Effects. What Reaſon can be given, why a

The ſixth Conference.

certain Compoſition of Sound ſhould put *one Man* in a Rage, without affecting *another* any Way? Now no Body will deny, that theſe Animals may have any mechanical Affection in common with Man; for that has no Sort of Affinity with Reaſon: And yet it would be a wide Step in Argument to infer from this, that the ſame Tune has the ſame Effect upon the Bird that learns to imitate the Sound, that it has upon you or me; ſince it is poſſible that we may be very differently affected by it. In ſhort, ſince they imitate indifferently whatever Tune they hear, without Preference, I ſcarce think they underſtand the Harmony, or Fineneſs of the Compoſition.

M. Since this imitating Faculty has no Choice, they do not ſeem to perceive the Harmony at all, unleſs we ſhould ſuppoſe that they perceive Harmony in the Lowing of a Bull, or Barking of a Dog. We ought, I think, to reaſon with more Caution and Exactneſs in ſuch Caſes, than generally we do —— But certainly, ſome Creatures are taught to perform ſtrange Tricks.

P. They are ſo: But the mechanical Methods which are taken to teach them ſhew, that they deal with ſenſitive Animals, and not with rational Beings. Upon a *Word*, or a *Sign*, the repeated good or bad Treatment is brought in View; and thus at laſt the *Sign* and the *Trick* become mechanically joined. This is extremely poor for a rational Creature! Nor can it be ſaid that this is for want of underſtanding

derſtanding our Language: People that are born both deaf and dumb want Language as much as the Brutes; and yet act very conſiſtently, and ſhew a ſurpriſing Ingenuity in learning many Things. The ſixth Conference.

M. This I did not reflect upon before, and I believe I muſt give up the Cauſe. Brutes certainly have an Advantage over thoſe Perſons who neither hear nor underſtand Language: So that though Language be extremely proper and helpful to rational Creatures, I ſee it is not that which makes us rational; nor therefore doth the Want of it hinder Brutes from being ſuch. The Imperfection lies deeper.——But I have heard of an *Ape* which played at Cheſs.

P. Theſe are *common-place Stories*, *Matho*; we ought to proceed as cautiouſly here, as we do in experimental Philoſophy. People muſt be ſatisfied that the Experiment holds; they will ſee it tried themſelves, and weigh all Circumſtances, before they draw any Concluſion from it. I could tell you many ſuch Stories: But it is Time to leave the Argument when it dwindles into Fable.

M. I propoſed the Story in Joke only; though thoſe Stories are ſometimes more than Common-place ones, they grow very particular, and People are affronted, if you pretend to doubt what they have been Eye-witneſſes to, or had from good Hands.

P. Then it is not good Manners to diſpute the Point; though it would be too much

The ſixth Conference.

Complaiſance to allow that a Story of this Kind decides the Queſtion.

M. What you ſaid at the Beginning ſeems extremely reaſonable. The Appearances ought to be univerſal, and liable to no Exception, from which we could conclude with Certainty, that Brutes are rational. To ſay they reaſon at *ſome Times*, appears equal to ſaying, they reaſon not at all. I have often thought on hearing thoſe Stories in Company, that the perfecteſt Brutes do a thouſand Actions which ſhew they are void of Reaſon, for one that could be any Way conſtrued to be the effect of Ratiocination: So that in referring to Appearances, the moſt perfect of them muſt be reckoned a thouſand Times more abſurd than rational. This confounds all; for why ſhould their Reaſon come and go, by Fits? or not anſwer them on all Exigencies alike?

P. You are certainly in the Right: Reaſon is an univerſal Faculty, and applicable in all Caſes where the Difficulty is but equal: Even where it is greater, Reaſon ſuggeſts that they ſhould at leaſt doubt and deliberate. And when we obſerve all Species act with amazing Juſtneſs and Sagacity, in Caſes that concern the *Preſervation of the Individual*, or the *Propagation of the Species*; and yet in other eaſier Caſes behave with incorrigible Abſurdity; we may fairly conclude that they are void of Reaſon, and act from another Principle in *theſe two Caſes*.

LXXXII. *M.* From

LXXXII. *M.* From what other Principle? Or how ſhall we account for the Wonders they ſteadily and conſtantly perform in theſe Caſes? For there are no Stories here; but every Man may be ſatisfied from his own Obſervation. The ſixth Conference.

P. What Creatures are they which perform the greateſt and moſt conſtant Wonders?

M. Why, the very leaſt Animals do that which is moſt ſurprizing. The *Bee* is a pregnant Inſtance of inimitable Art; no Body needs indulge Fancy here, or tell a ſingular Inſtance which happened at ſuch a Time, or in ſuch a Place; every Thing is miraculous. The *Spider*, the *Ant*, the *Silk-worm*, and all thoſe *Inſects*, which paſs through two or three States of Exiſtence, raiſe our Admiration. *Theſe laſt* act as if they had a full and comprehenſive View of all the Transformations they were to undergo, and knew what Creatures were to riſe from the Spoils of their Bodies, which they ſo carefully entomb for that Purpoſe. In their laſt State, they repoſite their Eggs for another Circulation of Animals, as if they underſtood the Nature of Plants, and ſaw through the whole Proceſs of the future Vegetation.

P. You owned, when we were ſpeaking on this Subject before, that theſe little Animals wrought conſiſtently in this myſterious Proceſs, without knowing what they did.

M. The ſame Reaſons ſhew me ſtill that they work blindly, and yet conſiſtently. I reſt ſatisfied, that the Bee knows nothing of Geometry,

The ſixth Conference.

Geometry, though the Cells ſhe builds are noble Inſtances of the Knowledge of that Science: Nor do the Birds of Paſſage keep an Almanack, though they rendezvous from all Parts of the Country on a certain Day; nor have they any Chart of the Country they are going to, or Compaſs to ſteer their Courſe by. Now it is this Paradox, or Myſtery (ſhall I call it?) of *Working artfully without Knowledge*, which I would have you unfold.——

P. Before we come to that, pray take Notice, That thoſe Creatures which perform the greateſt Wonders are certainly not endued with Reaſon. This rightly attended to takes off the whole Probability from their Side of the Queſtion, who would have the inferior Creatures rational; ſince the Things which require Reaſon and Knowledge moſt in them are performed by them without either. For if we are certain that theſe perform what is moſt difficult, from another Principle it would be humorſom and fooliſh to contend, that what is leſs difficult could not be done without the rational Powers of the human Soul.

M. I perceive, indeed, from what you obſerve, the Weakneſs of that whole Pretence. The *Bee*, not to mention her Work, ſeems to act more wonderfully in travelling out ſome Miles to the Heath to gather her Honey, and returning regularly to her own Home again, than the *Spaniel*, does in caſting round the Field to find out the Scent of the Fowl: And to contend that the Dog could not do this without reaſoning

ſeaſoning in his own Mind, while the Inſect does more, ſeems really no more than Humour.——But pray inform me, on what Principle do theſe little Creatures act?

P. Before I can do this you muſt tell me, Who teaches or inſtructs the *Young* of larger Animals, the *Lamb*, the *Calf*, the *Puppy*, *&c.* to ſuck their Dams? This is a common Inſtance, and without Ambiguity. They never ſaw an Example of this to copy after. Who informed them that a certain Liquor was proper Food for them? That this Liquor was to be found in the Body of their Dams? Or how to apply for it? Who inſtructed them in the Art of Sucking, the Principle of which was not known to Philoſophers till late? Yet they go readily about this Work the firſt Thing they do.

M. Nature inſtructs them in all this.

P. Very well! Nature inſtructs all theſe leſſer Creatures then, of which we were ſpeaking, to perform all theſe Miracles of Art, which you ſo much admire.

M. But I don't know,—this does not ſatisfy me.

P. You have as much Reaſon to be ſatisfied with my Anſwer, as I have to be ſatisfied with yours.——What do you mean by *Nature?*—

M. To deal plainly with you, I do not very well know; but this is the Account I have often heard given.

P. Does this Account ſatisfy you?

The fifth Conference.

M. When I begin to examine it more narrowly, I find it is nothing but a *Word*, which ſhifts off the Conſideration of the Point: And the Inſtance is ſo common, we never think it worth while to reflect upon it.

P. Conſider it again, and tell me, Whether any Inſtance which is brought to ſhew that Brutes reaſon, be more wonderful than this very firſt Action of theirs?

M. It is both more wonderful and better atteſted than any Inſtance I have heard alledged.——

P. Come, tell me, Who teaches the *Young* of all Animals, without Exception, firſt to make Uſe of their Limbs, and move their Bodies? As we obſerved before, this is a Secret to all the Philoſophers on Earth, how ſpontaneous Motion is performed. And how can every Brute, every Creature, ſo readily perform an Action, the Nature and Reaſon of which is ſuch a Myſtery! Who guides them in this Work?

M. I ſaw before, that both Men and Brutes are ignorant how ſpontaneous Motion is effected, but did not attend to any Difficulty in it.

P. There is the ſame Difficulty here, as when a little Inſect works blindly, and yet conſiſtently: For it can never be ſhewed that ſpontaneous Motion is performed by Reaſon, nor by Habit either, in the firſt Inſtance. Conſider how complicated a Machine the Body is; the Motion of every part requires a different

different Touch: And yet not only the Lamb, or the Calf, but the *little Chick*, hardly excluded the Shell, touches every Part of the Mechaniſm *artfully*, and *without Heſitation*. To ſee a little Bird run nimbly from you, with ſome Part of the Shell ſtill ſticking to it, is, if you reflect on it ſeriouſly, a more aſtoniſhing Inſtance, than if you ſaw a Perſon play ſkilfully on a Spinet, the firſt Time he had ever ſeen one. The Confer

M. You give me a View of the whole Wonder in this. It is fooliſh, I perceive, to be peremptory, that the Actions of Brutes are performed by their own Reaſon; when we do not know on what Principle ſuch a common Action as ſpontaneous Motion is at firſt performed by ourſelves. And as to a *Habit*, the firſt Practice in other Creatures ſeems equal to the Perfection of a Habit. No Body, I believe, thinks there is any Difficulty in this, that a Lamb newly yeaned ſhould riſe from the Ground, and walk about its Mother; though it ſees its Dam walk; that is all internal and hidden Work to it.——

P. Once more, *Matho*, for I muſt ply you cloſe with Queſtions; tell me who guides the *Peach-tree* to produce a *Peach*, rather than a *Pear*, or an *Apple*, or a *Cherry*, or a *Gooſe-berry*, or any other Kind of Fruit? For you remember that different Sorts of Trees may be grafted on the ſame Stock; and ſo the different Sorts of Fruits have but one common Matter to be wrought from:

The ſixth Conference.

And that the Pulp or Fleſh of the Peach, the Skin, the Kernel, and even the Stone itſelf, were but a few Weeks before in the Form of Sap: And laſtly, Seeds, you know, are not like *Moulds*, to direct the unſteady Hand of the Workman, but are themſelves originally formed without Mould or Pattern.

LXXXIII. *M.* Right, *Philon!* —— Give me Time to recollect a little.

P. Conſider the Point at your Leiſure.——

M. This ſhews me ſeveral Things at once. There can be no Miſtake here. I ſee by whoſe Art this muſt be done, where there is no living Creature to aſſiſt in the Effect. The conſtant Direction of the Deity is neceſſary in this Caſe; and it is no leſs neceſſary in the Formation of all animal Bodies, than of Vegetables: And farther, when theſe little Creatures have no Faculties to contrive, nor Knowledge to comprehend the myſterious Proceſs they are employed in, it is ſtill equally neceſſary, and equally plain, that they muſt be guided by the ſame Wiſdom, which conſtantly directs the Formation of their Bodies. The Tranſition is natural and eaſy. God is not leſs careful of *living Beings*, than of *vegetable Things*. I ſee it now! This is that *remarkable Connexion*, which you hinted before to be between the vegetable and animal Kingdoms, gently guiding our Mind in the Continuation of the *Scale*. The Steps are ſoft, indeed, and beautiful in this

this View! The *lower Animals* were not immediately to be abandoned to the Guidance of their own Powers. The Tranſition from Plants, *(mere vegetating Matter)* to free and ſelf-directed living Beings, had been violent, and indeed forced. O! I am charmed with the Thought! How unnatural would the contrary Suppoſition appear, to a Mind not miſled by Prejudices! How impoſſible, that ſuch little Inſects, ſuch microſcopical Animalcules, could have provided for their own Lives, for the Continuation of the Species, had not the Wiſdom of the *Creator* ſupplied their Want of Power and Knowledge! This is that other *Limit* you ſpoke of, which bounds ſenſitive Perfection on the one Side, as Reaſon does on the other.

P. This is that Principle of INSTINCT, *Matho*, which we talk ſo much about, without being aware how *real* it is, or how widely it extends among the Tribes of Animals, not excepting Man himſelf.

M. I was going to obſerve how indulgent and kind the Creator is: For from the Inſtance of *ſucking* and *ſpontaneous Motion* I ſee that, were it not for his ſupplying the Want of Knowledge by his early Direction, no Species of Animals, not even Man, could get over the firſt Difficulties of Life, but muſt inſtantly give up their new gotten Breath, under an Inability and Ignorance, what to do to preſerve it.

The ſixth Conference.

P. The Change in Truth, as you obſerved juſt now in the other Caſe, would be too ſudden and violent, to abandon an Animal newly excluded the Womb, which was but the Moment before in the Circumſtances of mere Vegetation and *Plant-Exiſtence*; to abandon it, I ſay, all at once, to its own Care and Proviſion, with no more Experience and Power than it brought from the dark Cell of the Womb with it.

M. From this I ſee that what we call *Inſtinct* in Animals is the conſtant and immediate Direction of them, by the ſame Divine Power and Wiſdom, which brings forward and guides every Plant of the Field, to its ſpecifick Perfection. It is this pleaſing Conſideration which we conceal from ourſelves, by aſcribing all theſe Miracles of Power and Goodneſs to *Nature*.

P. Nature, Matho, is the Deity of the *Atheiſt*, the Knowledge of the *Ignorant*, and the Refuge of a *ſlothful Mind*, in which all Abſurdities are conſiſtent. Nature, as an *univerſal ſurd Cauſe*, ſuperſedes farther Enquiry; and as a *mere Non-entity*, it requires of us neither Fear nor Reverence.

M. I ſhall be upon my Guard for the future, to have a conſiſtent Meaning in View, when I uſe the Word: But it is a Misfortune that the common Uſe of Language has almoſt conſecrated a *Term* that miſguides us; whereas *The Author of Nature* is a Manner of Expreſſion, which carries with it Light and Information to the Mind.

LXXXIV. *P.* To return, theſe lower Animals are conſtantly guided by this Principle of *Inſtinct*, which never forſakes them: This we may conclude from conſidering that Experience makes them not more perfect in their *Buildings*, *Manufactures*, *Proviſions*, than they were at firſt.

M. And from this alſo I conceive, that many Species of them live but for one Seaſon, and do the ſame Works but once.

P. And even in thoſe, *Matho*, which ſurvive for ſeveral Years, we never find any Improvement. Not only in the Works of the *Bee* or *Spider* we perceive no Difference between the Performance of the young and the old; but we find the ſame Equality of Architecture in the Neſts of *Birds*, whether they have built for the firſt Time, or oftener. Which ſhews us that Experience is of no Uſe to them, and that they ſtill act under the Direction of the firſt Principle.—In riſing through the Scale of Animals, we may obſerve that they begin gradually to act in many Caſes by the Direction of Senſe; but wherever that would fail to guide them, *Inſtinct* comes in to their Relief. Hence it is that they know their *Enemies* at any Time, though they have never ſeen them before; and their *natural Weapons* for Defence, though they never had Occaſion to uſe them before. The Females through all the Species are as *perfect Mothers*, and as knowing in rearing

The ſixth Conference.

their young for the firſt Time, as ever after. The cowardly then become reſolute, and the ſimple full of Stratagem: Afterward they ſink into their natural Stupidity again. Whence this *temporary* Courage and Subtlety? This ſhews that *Inſtinct* never forſakes the moſt perfect of the brute Species, when the Point concerns *Self-Defence*, or the *Propagation of the Kind.* ——It hath been excellently obſerved on this Head, that Reaſon is full of Variety, and therefore is ſtill ſupplanting one Contrivance with another. Hence the Diverſity of Arts, Cuſtoms, Manners, and of Language itſelf, in different Countries, and ſucceſſive Ages. It is not ſo among the moſt perfect Species of Brutes; they have the ſame unvaried Talents, Sagacity, and ſpecifick Endowments, in all Countries, and through all Ages. This at once ſhews the *Limitation* of their Nature (which we ſpoke of before) and that theſe Arts and permanent Policies are not of their own deviſing. Take any of theſe Animals from the *Dam* when young, and bring it up ſeparately from the reſt of its Species; notwithſtanding this, you will ſee it grow up as perfect in all the Arts and Behaviour of that Species, as if it had been bred among them. On the other Hand, imagine that ſome of thoſe Stories we have heard related were true; and that one of our Species was ſuckled, and brought up by the wild Beaſts in the Woods; and then conſider whether ſuch a Crea-

Creature would naturally fall into the Manners and Behaviour of Mankind.

M. It is not to be ſuppoſed; ſuch a Creature would be a *mute Monſter*, agreeing with no Species of Animals in the Creation. I am quite ſatisfied of the Force of *Improvement* upon human Nature, and that it has no Force at all upon the Brutes, which are made perfect at one Stroke: Hence I perceive that the Faculties by which Men, and inferior Animals, become perfect in their ſeveral Species, differ not only in *Degree*, but in *Kind*, as you obſerved. I could aſk you many Queſtions concerning the Origin of Language, which I ſee is not natural to Mankind, though moſt other Creatures have ſome natural Cry, which I ſuppoſe has been peculiar to the Species from the Beginning of the World: But, without interrupting you, ſhall obſerve, that I have often known a *Puppy* grow up in a Family, where it ſaw none of its own Kind, and yet become as perfect in the Arts and Genius of that Species, as if it had been educated in the Kennel.

P. The brute Mind is certainly leſs active than the human; the great Spring of Action in them is their being ſtimulated by ſome bodily Appetite: Now that a leſs active Being ſhould ſo readily jump into all the Arts and Manners peculiar to their ſeveral Tribes, and be utterly incapable of any other; and that Man, with more Activity of Soul, ſhould require ſo much Time to acquire the Perfections

of

The ſixth Conference.

of his Nature, concludes ſomething more than Mankind will allow themſelves to reflect upon.

M. You have brought me entirely over to your Side. As this Argument is equally applicable to the moſt perfect, as well as the leaſt perfect Animals, it convinces me that theſe *unſtudied Arts*, theſe *extemporary Endowments*, for which we ſo much admire them, are none of their own Acquiſition, as Men's are, but come from a higher Origin.

P. It ſeems to me equally to cut off the Pretenſions of the higheſt and loweſt Species to the Power of Reaſoning. Senſitive Perfection, indeed, riſes by various Degrees, which always brings their Actions nearer an Imitation of ours: Their Senſes aid each other in a manner we can never be Judges of. No Man would allow that Colours might be diſtinguiſhed by the Touch, if ſome Inſtances did not ſhew it poſſible. From this Acuteneſs of Senſe it is, that many Animals prognoſticate the Changes of Weather, which we cannot foreſee. You remember the Paſſage

—*Nunquam imprudentibus imber*—

A great Source of our Miſtakes about Brutes ſeems to be, that when we conſider ſome of their Actions, and the Operations of our own Minds in like Circumſtances, without farther Examination of their Natures, or taking in

in the whole Tenor of their Actions, we aſcribe to them, from theſe particular, equivocal Appearances, all the Workings of the human Mind.

M. I am verily perſuaded this is often the Caſe. We early contract a Liking to ſome particular Animal, or Species, which makes us partial in their Favour; and then we ſet up for *rational Brutes* all our Lives after, without examining the Point farther.

P. This is the firſt Notion we naturally fall in with, and it rarely comes under ſuch a ſevere Review, as moſt of our other early Prejudices. But it is Time to leave a Subject, which you will hear diſcuſſed in every Company, according to People's Humour or Inclination.

LXXXV. *M.* Pray, before we leave it, tell me, what that Power of the Soul is, in which Reaſon chiefly conſiſts, and which the Brutes have not?

P. We have not Time to go to the Bottom of that Subject: However, I ſhall tell you in general what my Thoughts are about it. Brutes have certainly the ſame Power of ſpontaneous Motion, as we Men have; and ſome of them a more early and abſolute Command in moving their Bodies: Moſt Species alſo have their Senſes far more acute than Man, as was obſerved juſt now. And it was but reaſonable, that Creatures, which want a higher Power of the Soul, ſhould have

The ſixth Conference.

have the ſenſitive Nature in greater Perfection. If then they had the ſame Command over the Perceptions of the Mind that Man has, they would be, I think, equally rational. For if we conſider your Inſtance of *a Puppy brought up in a Family*, without ſeeing any of its own Species, it has certainly the ſame original Perceptions, as the Infant with whom it lives familiarly: And if it could make the ſame Uſe of the ſame original Ideas, or work the ſame Way with them, it would improve equally, and at length become as perfect a *Reaſoner* as the Child.

M. I perceive the Truth of all this as you go along.

P. Then it could be ſhewed, I preſume, with Exactneſs and Preciſion of Argument, That the Power of calling back to View, and detaining under Conſideration, the paſt Perceptions of the Mind, is that alone from which all the rational Operations of the human Soul are derived.

M. Do you think that ſuch a Variety of Operations can ſpring from ſo ſimple a Power?

M. This appears to me a right Symptom that the Thing is really ſo. Nature (to ſpeak in the common way) that is, the Wiſdom of the Deity, is frugal in the Means, and fertile in Effects. By the Help of this Power alone, we compare our original Ideas, compound them, divide them, and abſtract from them; forming at firſt with Difficulty general Notions, and from theſe again others ſtill more

more abſtract; and, in a word, perform all thoſe Operations, which belong to Ratiocination. It is but the ſame Power variouſly exerted, to which Men have given the Names of various Operations. For in ſeeing the Agreement or Diſagreement of our Ideas, or their ſeveral Relations to each other, after they are carefully formed, and clearly perceived, we are as neceſſary, or paſſive, as in ſeeing the Agreement or Diverſity of two Objects when preſented to the Eye. And you may obſerve in all the Arts that Men learn, the various Application of the ſame Power, begets a great Variety of Appearances in the Practice. The ſixth Conference.

M. I begin almoſt to be perſuaded of this, when I conſider that the Power only of moving the Hand is that by which all mechanical Arts are acquired and practiſed; though this Power receives various Turns, as the Hand is habituated to different Tools or Inſtruments: And if the Hand is any way diſabled, the Exerciſe of the Art is loſt.

P. No Simile hits in all Reſpects, *Matho*; but yours is ſo far juſt, that if we ſuppoſe the Power of calling back paſt Perceptions into the Mind entirely loſt; though the Man ſhould ſtill be a *pri cipient Being*, he could no more reaſon, or reflect on what did not immediately ſtrike his Eye, than he could read a Book in the Dark, or ſee Objects through a Stone Wall.

M. Thus far is very plain.

The ſixth Conference.

P. Conſider alſo this Circumſtance. If we had not the Power of calling back our paſt Perceptions at Pleaſure; but if, inſtead of that, they were obtruded upon us, or brought into our View at the Diſcretion of ſome other Being, (as often happens in our Dreams) we could never reaſon conſiſtently, but ſhould live under one continued Deception.

M. I believe I muſt come into your Notion, that this Power is really the Foundation of Reaſoning; ſince if it be taken away, or reſtored, the Faculty of Reaſoning is at the ſame Time loſt, or recovered; and in Proportion as it is diſturbed, our Reaſoning becomes inconſiſtent; as is often the Caſe in Sleep, and Diſorders of the Head.

P. If then we conſider in the laſt Place, that the Mind of Brutes is calm and ſtill, unleſs when ſome Call from Senſe prompts them to Action, it ſeems to follow, that this Power of calling back their paſt Perceptions to View, is the Power they are not endued with; in Conſequence of which they have nothing to guide them, when taken out of the Train of *Senſe* and *Inſtinct*, whence they muſt act abſurdly in all ſuch Caſes.

M. All this is extremely reaſonable; but there is ſtill one Thing occurs to me, which looks like an Objection.

P. What is it?

M. Brutes ſometimes ſeem to act from the ſame Principle, and in the ſame Manner, as rational Creatures do: Thus an Animal be-

reaved of its Young, or of its Mate, is hurried on with Rage, or ſunk in Grief.

P. The inferior Creatures, *Matho*, are tortured with more violent Paſſions than Men; which is by no Means a Mark of their being rational, as ſome imagine, but rather of their being irrational. Paſſion is purely an *animal Affection*, and maintained in the Mind, not by a Command over the paſt Perceptions, but by a Want of Command over them; or by the ſame Perception remaining ſtill in View. The Object of *Grief*, *Jealouſy*, or *Revenge*, ſits cloſe on the brute Mind; and by that alone it is hurried on, without Relief from the Power of calling in other Ideas to be at the ſame Time conſidered. It is thus they fight and tear each other, with irreconcileable Rage, and often without any apparent Provocation. We may know ſomething of this from our own Experience: The Expreſſions, *Ira furor brevis eſt*,——*Impedit ira animum*——have a more philoſophical Meaning than we are aware of. Could we examine our paſt Perceptions coolly while in Paſſion, as at other Times, we ſhould rarely be under theſe brutal Affections. So that I would take the Liberty to correct what you call an Objection, and, inſtead of ſaying that Brutes act from the ſame Principle, and in the ſame Manner as rational Creatures; ſay, rational Creatures often act from the ſame Principle, and in the ſame Manner as brute Beaſts.

The ſixth Conference.

M. I find what I took for an Objection, rather confirms what you advanced.——With reſpect to that conſtant *Stillneſs* and *Silence* which you ſay reigns in the brute Mind, except when the Calls from Senſe ſolicit it, I have obſerved, I think, that ſome Species of Brutes, thoſe particularly that feed on Vegetables, ſleep leſs than Man: Their whole Buſineſs ſeems to be Food and Reſt. Now I have often wondered what could be the Object of their Thoughts, while they lie for ſeveral Hours together on the Ground: And I begin to fancy, if their Minds were buſy all the while, their Bodies would not have ſo much Eaſe; that they would be put on ſome Action, or give ſome Indication of what paſſed then in their Thoughts.

P. This Calmneſs and Inactivity of the brute Mind ſeems to be every Way wiſely ordered: For to what Purpoſe ſhould Creatures have their Minds occupied, whoſe Nature requires nothing, which they are not in Poſſeſſion of? And then, were they to reflect ever ſo little, how terrible would they be to Man! It muſt be conſtant War, without Quarter on either Side. Did they know their own Advantage, who durſt appear in the Fields, or perhaps be ſafe in Houſes? The *laborious Ox*, and the *ſerviceable Horſe*, would be our moſt dreadful Enemies. The moſt tractable Creatures would rebel, and few are ſo weak that might not annoy us. It would make all the Odds in the World to the Life of Man, to want

want their Aſſiſtance as Brutes, and to feel their Enmity as rational Creatures. Conſider the Conſequences of this at your Leiſure, with reſpect to our Carriages, Travelling, Tillage. They could live eaſily without us; eſpecially when furniſhed with rational Faculties. Men will needs have Brutes to be rational, without conſidering what a Miſery it would be to us, if they were. If they reflected but ever ſo little, they would never bear the unequal Conditions they muſt then labour under. Would they ſubmit their Back to the Blows, and their Throats to the Knife? What Goodneſs is it then, that Creatures ſo much ſtronger than Man ſhould nevertheleſs be ſubjected to the ſuperior Power of his Mind!

LXXXVI. *M.* Theſe Reflections are quite new to me: I ſee with Surprize the terrible Diſorder that muſt enſue in the Animal World, on the Suppoſition that Brutes were rational. I have only one more Queſtion to trouble you with on this Head.

P. I am glad to hear that; pray propoſe it.

M. Does the advantageous Structure of the human Body contribute nothing to the Perfection of the rational Soul? Or would not a brute Soul be rational if in a human Body.

P. You obſerved frequently and juſtly, at our laſt Meeting, that a mere Figure, or mere Order of Parts, can teach a Creature nothing. Were you or I turned into the Figure of a Swallow, as the Poets ſay *Progne* was, we

The ſixth Conference.

ſhould know no more of building a Swallow's Neſt, (which, though clumſy in Appearance, is juſtly admired as a notable Piece of Architecture) than if we were turned to the Shape of a four-footed Beaſt. We could do nothing without being guided by the ſame Principle of Inſtinct, as well as having the ſame Figure. The Lark, and ſeveral other ſmall Birds, ſeem as much cut out for ſuch a Piece of Work, as the Swallow: Yet every one of theſe have a different Art of Building, and quite different Inſtincts. Animals differ more in their Inſtincts and Genius, than in the Shape and Figure of their Bodies: Conſider a *Hare* and a *Rabbit*; or a *Rat* and a *Mole*; they have quite different Inſtincts, and ſcarce live in the ſame Element. Many ſuch Inſtances might be given in Birds and Fiſhes. This could not be, if the various Structure of the Body endued Creatures with various Talents. Have you reflected on the Abſurdity contained in your Queſtion? *The Deity forms the Body, a Syſtem of dead Matter; and this Syſtem of dead Matter forms the Soul!* The Origin of this unaccountable Prejudice is, becauſe the Creator hath ſo wonderfully adapted the Structure of the Body to the Capacities and Powers of the living Part. Hence we infer, that the Soul owes its Capacities and Powers to the Structure of the Body. Pray call to Mind again the Inertia of Matter: I thought there had been no Occaſion for reſuming the Conſideration of that Subject.—The *Spider*, it is true, could not

not handle her delicate Threads ſo nicely, without her exquiſite fine Fingers: But thoſe Fingers do not teach her to diſpoſe her Threads, or how to accompliſh the Deſign of her Web. The Club-ſhape of the *Bee* is nevertheleſs excellently fitted to the forming her hexagonal Cell: But this Shape doth not ſhew her either the Property of that Figure, or how to obſerve the Proportion in Practice. The ſhort ſtrong Legs of the *Mole*, are ſkilfully deſigned for her Working under Ground; but they might for all that remain uſeleſs, unleſs ſhe were prompted with the Art of employing them. And ſo in other Caſes. The Parts of the Body, therefore, ſerve only as Inſtruments to anſwer the ſeveral Powers and Inſtincts of the immaterial Being: But ſurely they are neither the *Powers* that move themſelves, nor do they teach the Art whereby they are employed. We ſaw before that the Power of the Deity muſt intervene to perform the mechanical Part of ſpontaneous Motion, and relieve the Soul: and as to the Method by which this is contrived, it remains an impenetrable Secret. After this let a ſober Man ſuppoſe, if he can, that the different Structure of the Body makes one Creature rational, and endues another with Inſtinct.

M. Though all this be now very plain from what you ſaid before, I ſhould have been at a Loſs in making the Application; and am pleaſed that I propoſed my unſkilful Queſtion. As the brute Body could not give any Inſtinct to the human Soul; ſo contrarily, I ſee now

The ſixth Conference.

that the human Body could not make the brute Soul rational.

P. Moſt certainly it could not. There is nothing ſo unphiloſophical, and abſurd, as thoſe idle Stories of Changes of Shapes, and Metamorphoſes, with which the Heads of Boys are ſtuffed. Were a brute Creature transformed into a human Shape, it would be nothing more than a *breathing* or *ſenſitive Log*, without ſo much as the Power of ſpontaneous Motion in ſuch a new Body. This firſt Step (as was obſerved) would require the Interpoſition of the Deity. And then conſider the human Soul itſelf, by what various Degrees of Improvement it arrives at the Perfection of its Nature. After that tell me, if you think a brute-Soul could be converted into a rational Being, merely by ſhifting Habitations? ——It is certain, that the firſt of our Species were made rational, and endued with Knowledge, without their own Application; that is, by the immediate Power of the Deity. All the Philoſophers on Earth will never account for the Origination of Mankind otherwiſe. And in the ſame Manner alſo they were prompted with the firſt Uſe of Language. Now to imagine that a Frame of dead Matter ſhould have the ſame Effect, as the divine Power, is, to ſay no more, ſtrange Inatttention.

M. I am glad you have given me this Hint concerning the Origin of Language. Young People help to deceive themſelves by their own Credulity. When I read that Piſmires were

were metamorphoſed into the *Myrmidons*, I imagined they ſpoke the Greek Language of Courſe: As if Language was a neceſſary Conſequence of having a human Figure. The ſixth Conference.

P. Leaving Fable, *Matho*, we may obſerve, if the Frame of the human Body could not give the Soul the Power of moving itſelf, without the immediate Help of the Deity, it could much leſs endue the Soul with the Power of Reaſoning. The Body of Man, indeed, has a more curious Mechaniſm, a more complicated Apparatus, and particularly in the Brain, than the Body of any other Animal; as *Anatomiſts* have obſerved, and as was but juſt and neceſſary, to ſerve for more various Purpoſes: But all this Apparatus is only the Inſtrument for executing, not the Power that executes. A more complicated Machinery requires more Power to work, or employ it, than a ſimpler Syſtem; but can as little impart any Power, as unwrought Matter itſelf.

M. This I underſtand; and from this I conceive it will follow, that a Diſorder of the Mechaniſm in the Body, would impede the Exerciſe of the Powers of the Soul: But the beſt Order could beſtow no Power upon it.

P. It is directly ſo. You obſerved excellently well before, That a *Loom* could never teach one the Art of Weaving; though one who underſtood the Art of Weaving might employ it to that Purpoſe. And the Argument is the ſame wherever Matter or Mechaniſm is employed. And after all, pray reflect, *Ma-*

The ſixth Conference.

tho, what abſurd and inconſiſtent Suppoſitions thoſe are, which we borrow from the *Poets*; *That a brute Soul ſhould animate the human Body, or a rational Soul the Body of a Brute.* By whoſe Power could this be effected? If by the Creator's alone, why ſhould we ſuppoſe him to act contrary to the Natures of Things by him eſtabliſhed? Or why ſtudy to draw an Argument from his Power for equalling Beings, which the ſame Power has made different? This is taking an Argument from the wrong Side to ſuppoſe the Power of the Deity to counteract his Wiſdom. Since the uniting of the Soul to the Body is his immediate Work, there can be no miſ-joining of Souls to Bodies. We firſt ſuppoſe that *Chance* might have the Ordering of this Affair, and then enquire how Things would be, if diſpoſed otherwiſe than the Deity has done: Which is notably fooliſh. It is as if we ſhould aſk, What kind of a Flower the *Tulip* would be, if it ſprung from the Seed of a *Melon?* Or what Taſte an *Onion* would have, if it grew on a *Fig-Tree?*

M. You have fully opened to me the whole Impertinence of my Queſtion, and the Ignorance of ſuch Suppoſitions. I hope I ſhall think more correctly with regard to theſe Matters for the future.

P. We ought to reflect with Pleaſure, *Matho*, that the Power of the Creator is immediately concerned in the Natures of theſe irrational Creatures: This is doing Juſtice to them; and it aſſures us that he will not, cannot neglect rational Beings.

LXXXVII. *M.* After this ſhort View of the Works of Nature, pray reſume a little, before I leave you, a Subject you juſt touch'd upon ſome Time ago, concerning the Nature of the Deity, and the Neceſſity of his Exiſtence.

P. I thought *Matho* had been a Man of his Word.

M. Come, *Philon*, you muſt not deny me: You don't uſe to do a good Office by Halves.

P. It is not an eaſy Thing to ſpeak of the Deity abſtractedly, and in his own Nature, which is ſo much above our Comprehenſion: It is both more intelligible, and more delightful to ſpeak of him as the Cauſe of all other Things that exiſt. In thoſe Effects we ſee his Perfections of Power, Knowledge, and Goodneſs, diſplayed to us in the moſt obvious Manner; and thence come to the Knowledge of him, as he is the Creator of all Things. This, as we obſerved before, is a comfortable Relation, between the Deity and us.

M. But pray ſhew me how the Neceſſity of the Deity's Exiſtence appears?

P. Power and *Knowledge*, you know, are that only which is neceſſary in the Nature of Things; for this obvious Reaſon, becauſe if Power and Knowledge did not neceſſarily exiſt, they could not be produced by a Cauſe without Power and Knowledge; that is, by

The ſixth Conference.

an *ignorant* and *impotent Cauſe*. Which is the ſame as ſaying, if Power and Knowledge were not neceſſary, they muſt be abſolutely impoſſible and contradictory. Thus far you ſee?

M. Perfectly well.

P. Then, for the ſame Reaſon that Power and Knowldge are at all neceſſary, infinite Power and Knowledge are neceſſary: For Things of a contrary Nature could not limit them; or rather, there was nothing of a contrary Nature to limit them. Since Impotence and Ignorance are mere Negations.

M. Thus we find infinite Power and Knowledge neceſſary.

P. Next, it is the Nature of infinite Power and infinite Knowledge to be united, or to belong to the ſame Being. Things of a contrary Nature, or mere Negations, could not ſeparate them. Nothing could oppoſe infinite Power, or ſeparate Knowledge from it, except Impotence, or want of Power, which is no Cauſe: Nor any Thing ſeparate Power from infinite Knowledge, except Ignorance, which is nothing poſitive. And it is not the Nature of infinite Power to divide itſelf from Knowledge; nor of infinite Knowledge to divide itſelf from Power: The firſt would be then *infinite Fury*, and the ſecond *infinite Folly*.

M. Moſt certainly.

P. Then from a Plenitude of Power and Knowledge, you yourſelf infer'd the Neceſſity of *Goodneſs* and *Juſtice*: Becauſe a Being

ing poſſeſſed of all Power and all Knowledge, could neither have *Malice* nor *Envy*; nor therefore be tyrannical, nor unjuſt; but rather infinitely Good, and infinitely Juſt. This is a neceſſary Reſult from boundleſs Power and Knowledge.

M. This too I remember very well.

P. Now, ſince it is the Nature of theſe four Perfections to belong to the ſame Being, and ſince there was nothing of a contrary Nature to ſeparate them; or ſince their Nature is all that *was*, or *is neceſſary:* That they ſhould be ſeparated from each other, or divided among more Beings, is a Thought ſo much without Foundation, that when we form our Notions truly, and according to Reaſon, it will not be in our Power to conceive the Poſſibility of it. Hence the *Unity* of the *Deity* ſo little wants a Proof or Demonſtration, that we muſt ſee it neceſſarily and intuitively, when we fall into the right Train of Thought.

M. You have reſumed the Subject juſt in the very Manner I wanted to hear it: This will ſtick with me better, becauſe it is a ſhort connected Account.——From this I ſee that it is the moſt grievous Abſurdity, and Contradiction to Nature, to ſuppoſe the *Non-exiſtence* of the Deity. If the Deity did not exiſt, nothing at all could ever have exiſted. There muſt then have been an infinite and univerſal Non-exiſtence, *an infinite, an eternal*, and *neceſſary Nothing!* What a monſtrous

The ſixth Conference.

ſtrous Abſurdity is this! *Being* and *Perfection* muſt then have been neceſſarily impoſſible! What poor Reaſoners the Atheiſts are, who do not ſee the neceſſary Nature of *Power* and *Knowledge*, from this Alternative, That theſe muſt either be abſolutely neceſſary, or utterly impoſſible in Nature!—An *infinite*, an *eternal*, a *neceſſary Nothing!* Theſe are terrible Contradictions!—Infinite, eternal, and neceſſary, muſt belong to ſomething poſitive. Hence I ſee that *Being* and *Perfection* muſt be *infinite* and *neceſſary*: Or this Neceſſity concludes for Plenitude and Infinity of Being and Perfection, as much as for Being and Perfection at all.

P. You have entered deep into the Thought, *Matho*.

M. This Subject was difficult to me the firſt Time we touched upon it: But now I am ſaying nothing, but what I have a clear and firm Notion of.

P. Allow me then to aſk you a Queſtion or two.

M. With all my Heart.

P. Does this Neceſſity hold, as well to Eternity, as from Eternity? For ſome People doubt of this.

M. It is a Neceſſity of Nature, which can never wear out, nor hath it Reſpect to Time. To ſuppoſe that this Neceſſity could ever ceaſe, is to ſuppoſe the *Neceſſity* of Being and Perfection, a *Poſſibility* only of Being and Perfection! It is to ſuppoſe that Neceſſity of Exiſtence

The ſixth Conference.

iſtence might at length become a Neceſſity of Non-exiſtence! It is to ſuppoſe that *nothing* might ſome Time or other be poſſeſſed of the Properties of *infinite* and *neceſſary!* If *Nothing* may have this Reality of Nature, *Truth* is at an End, and *Reaſon* antiquated! Laſtly, thoſe People forget, that this is the Neceſſity of Infinity of Power and Knowledge. What could prevail againſt theſe!

P. You point rightly to the monſtrous Conſequences of a contrary Suppoſition. Tell me next, Doth the Exiſtence of the Deity depend upon his own *Will*, or *Power?*

M. To ſuppoſe the Deity exiſted, becauſe he willed it, or had Power to give himſelf Exiſtence, is to ſuppoſe him once not to have exiſted, and at the ſame Time to have had a Will whereby he choſe to exiſt, or Power to cauſe himſelf to exiſt. Theſe are ill-coupled and inconſiſtent Notions in the Brain of Man. As was ſaid before, to perform, or reconcile any Contradiction, is not the Object of real Power, or Knowledge; and leaſt of all to perform or reconcile this ſhocking Repugnancy. To ſuppoſe the Perfections of the Deity to depend upon his Power, or Will, is only ſetting one Perfection of his Nature in Oppoſition to another, either ignorantly or perverſely.

P. This is a notable Inſtance of Contradiction, which we may leave the *Scepticks* to doubt about: And ſince the Performance of any Contradiction ſuppoſes the Power of the Deity

The ſixth Conference.

Deity to give his Knowledge the Lie, we may obſerve, as we go on, *how firm the Baſis of human Knowledge is.* Let me only aſk you farther, ſince the Exiſtence and Nature of the Deity alone is neceſſary, whence have other Things their Nature and Exiſtence?

M. There being no Source from which any Thing elſe can be derived, all other Things muſt be his Effects: Or they muſt have been created by his Power, and have derived their Natures (or the Properties of their Being) from his Knowledge. And now, *Philon*, I ſee that the Deity muſt be the *Creator of all Things*, even by this Method. For as I underſtood before, by conſidering the Nature of Matter, that it was the Effect of his Power; ſo I perceive now, by conſidering his Nature, that Matter, and all Things beſides, (I mean *immaterial living Beings*) are the Effect of the ſame Power.

P. We may indeed come to the Knowledge of the ſame Truth, either by beginning with the *Effects*, and mounting to the *Cauſe*; or by beginning at the *Cauſe*, and deſcending to the *Effects*. Both Methods are good in Conjunction, and ſerve to illuſtrate each other: But this laſt Method does not convey ſuch a practical Conviction to the Heart; and it requires a Mind perfectly ſubjected to the Determination of Reaſon: Though it may ſometimes be neceſſary to ſilence a metaphyſical *Adverſary*, who may run up his Objections into abſtract Speculations. For then, as was obſerv-

obſerved before, we can thus ſhew, that the Reaſon for the Exiſtence of the Deity does not depend on the Exiſtence of the material World.

M. But with all Submiſſion, I cannot help thinking, *Philon*, that the Mind of Man often runs into theſe abſtract Speculations by itſelf, and without being forced upon them by Oppoſition. We naturally indulge ſuch Thoughts at Times, and the Reveries of young Minds are nearly allied to the Reſearches of Philoſophers. I have often thought with myſelf, what muſt have happened, if nothing had exiſted from Eternity? Or why all Things might not again ceaſe to be? Let me throw out of Exiſtence whatever I would, I found *Eternity* neceſſarily remaining, and *Space* too; but had not Compaſs of Thought enough to reflect on the Reaſon that ſhews *Power* and *Knowledge* the firſt Things neceſſary. Now in ſuch Caſes it is of Uſe to have ſome firm Principle to reaſon from, or return to, when one finds one's ſelf loſt in the Enquiry. And upon this Account, pardon me, if I think, that it is proper to enter a young Mind on the Conſideration of the Neceſſity of Exiſtence, as ſoon as it becomes liable to fall into theſe Reveries.

P. I dare not diſpute your Experience, *Matho:* But ſince you think theſe Notions ſo eaſy to young Minds, pray make the Trial among your Companions, ſince you ſay you diſcourſe our Subjects over again with them.

M. I

The ſixth Conference.

M. I ſhall not fail to try the Experiment, and report the Succeſs.——But

LXXXVIII. Something occurs here, which I cannot well reconcile to what has been ſaid.

P. What is that?

M. If nothing beſides the Deity himſelf be thus neceſſary and immutable, how is it that we find *Truth* equally neceſſary, and the ſame from Eternity to Eternity? No Power can change the Nature of Truth, or, as was obſerved juſt now, make a Contradiction true.

P. Nothing, *Matho*, except the Deity himſelf, or what belongs intimately to his Nature, can be neceſſary. And hence it is, namely, becauſe the Nature of Truth is neceſſary and eternal, that an *eternal Intelligence*, or the *divine Intellect*, is diſcoverable by us in a very ſingular Manner, and wonderfully proper to the Nature of the Thing.

M. Pray ſhew me how that Diſcovery is made?

P. Eternal Truths have no Connexion with the Exiſtence of created Things, and can neither be created nor periſh; but being neceſſarily and unchangeably true, were always known in the *divine Intellect*, where they exiſt immutably, (if the Expreſſion may be proper) which *Intellect* therefore they diſcover to us immediately.

M. As this is quite new to me, pleaſe to explain it more at large?

P. Have

P. Have you never heard that in the *abſtract Sciences*, new Truths and Properties of Things, ſuch, to wit, as were not known to Mankind before, have been diſcovered?

M. Often; and thoſe deſervedly praiſed, by whoſe Induſtry thoſe Truths were brought to Light: At the Head of whom, I ſuppoſe, from what you ſaid, the *Great Newton* deſerves to be placed.

P. You have Reaſon to ſay ſo,——But did thoſe Authors make ſuch Truths originally, or frame and mould them according to their Pleaſure?

M. Surely they did not; for then the Truths could not have been ſaid to be diſcovered, or found out, but Truths newly made or contrived. When any Thing is diſcovered, it muſt have been the ſame Thing before it was diſcovered, as after. When a Man diſcovers a *Mine* in his Ground, it would be abſurd to ſay, *he contrived*, or *made the Mine*.

P. Beſides, *Matho*, if it were poſſible to *coin*, or *ſtamp* new Truths, according to every Man's Fancy, what Work ſhould we have? What Confuſion, and Ruin of all Truth? You may imagine the Conſequences of this yourſelf. Every Man would raiſe a Syſtem of Science, to ſupport his Party, or advance his Intereſt; and another would confute it by contrary Truths, to maintain his Side of the Queſtion. Where would this end among jarring Humours, and contrary Factions? Truth would fight againſt Truth, and nothing could be true.

M. Ah!

The ſixth Conference.

M. Ah! ſpeak no more of it; the Confuſion would be inexpreſſible! Nothing is more neceſſary than *that Truth ſhould be neceſſary, and unyielding*; that Men of honeſt Intentions may have a certain Standard to be directed by, and deſigning Men ſomething to condemn themſelves in their own Breaſts.

P. If then the Nature of Truth be thus eternal and unchangeable, from what ſhall we derive it? Conſider that Queſtion firſt.—Then, Does not the Deity, think you, know all Truth?——Could his Knowledge be infinite if he did not?——Can there be any Knowledge in a created Intellect that he does not know?

M. That cannot be ſuppoſed, without an impious Abſurdity.

P. Could he be beholden to any Thing elſe, do you think, for the Perfection of his Intellect? Or can Truth have a ſeparate Nature, to and from which he is forced to apply and learn? We ſaw that his Knowledge is neceſſarily infinite. Can Truth then, eternal and neceſſary Truth, have a ſeparate Nature of its own, independent of this neceſſary Infinity of Knowledge?——Where will you place this independent Nature of Truth?---In Emptineſs! inert Matter! or a Negation of Perfection! For the Nature of the Deity comprehends, exhauſts every Perfection; leaves out nothing, except Imperfection, Impotence, and Ignorance.

M. Do not multiply your Queſtions ſo faſt. I ſee that the neceſſary Infinity of Knowledge, and

and the neceſſary unchangeable Nature of Truth muſt coincide.

P. Let a Man ſhew me two ſeparate neceſſary Natures; one to be the Fountain of Truth, and the other the Origin of Knowledge abſtracted from Truth.

M. You make the Contradiction monſtrous; and have fully ſatisfied me of this Truth, *That all Truth was eternally in, and draws its Nature from the divine Intellect.* Aſk me but one Queſtion at once, and try if I can give you diſtinct Anſwers.

P. Tell me then, When did thoſe Truths, the Diſcovery of which you have heard ſo much celebrated, begin to be Truths?

M. They never had a Beginning, but were always and neceſſarily true, before they were underſtood by us; and would be always equally true, though no created Intellect underſtood them. The Truths yet undiſcovered are equally certain, and equally known to an *infinite Intellect*, as when they ſhall be perceived by Men. The Nature of Truth, or the Certainty of it, does not depend on the Accident of being known by more, or fewer. It is abſolute, and above all ſuch Conditions.

P. Has Truth a Nature?

M. What is neceſſary and immutable, muſt have a neceſſary and immutable Nature.

P. Whence doth Truth derive this neceſſary and immutable Nature?

The ſixth Conference.

M. From the divine Intellect, where it was always known, and always exiſted. Every Piece of real Knowledge, every demonſtrative Truth we come to ſee, is a Part (ſo to ſpeak) of that Knowledge which was eternally in the *divine Mind.*

P. Hath Truth no ſeparate Subſiſtence by itſelf?

M. It hath not; nor can it have a Subſiſtence in any Thing *ſurd*, and *unintelligent.*

P. What is Truth then?

M. It is *Knowledge* or *Science* in the Intellect of ſome Being. Truth exiſting in no Intellect, is as repugnant, as Knowledge exiſting in no Intellect, or Power belonging to no Being. Truth (as I underſtand from what you ſaid juſt now) is the Connexion, or Agreement of Ideas; and Ideas cannot be out of a Mind. Eternal Truths, therefore, muſt always have exiſted in an *Eternal Mind*; which they thus diſcover to us, in a Method, indeed, as you obſerved, moſt proper to the Nature of the Thing.

LXXXIX. And now, *Philon*, I have not received a more ſenſible Pleaſure from any Thing you have yet ſhewed me, than from this new Diſcovery of the Deity. I ſee as much the Exiſtence of an *Eternal Mind*, of an *Infinite Intelligence*, as I ſee that Truth was before I was born, or before the firſt Man was created. This is a Demonſtration of the Deity, as an *infinitely knowing Being*, which the Mind of

The ſixth Conference

of Man draws from nothing from without, from nothing in the viſible Frame of Nature, but only from its inward Perception of Truth. The Method from the *human* to the *divine Mind* connects the Soul of Man immediately with the Deity. Theſe eternal Truths are to our intellectual Nature, what the viſible Wonders in the Heavens or Earth are to the Eyes. What a Pleaſure is it to reflect that our real Knowledge is a Part of the Knowledge in the divine Intellect!

P. Conſider from this then, *Matho*, how blame-worthy thoſe Men are, who have endeavoured to perſuade the World, that there is not a *governing Mind*, a *ſupreme Intelligence* in Nature; who acknowledge only the blind Force of inert Matter in all the Wonders of Wiſdom and Knowledge we obſerve; and to veil their Perverſeneſs, ſpeak of *Dame Nature* as a Deity, which by an equivocal Sound, takes off the Abſurdity to the Ear.

M. Since the Power of a dead Subſtance is a Contradiction, this is throwing off both *infinite Power* and a *governing Mind* at once. It would be a wretched Sovereignty, if (as thoſe People ſeem to intend) Man was the ſupreme intelligent Being in the Univerſe! But what Madneſs poſſeſſes miſerable Mortals, that they ſhould endeavour to perſuade their Fellow-creatures, that this World is the Off-ſpring of Chance, without a Being of infinite Perfections to govern the whole! Can it be againſt any one's Intereſt, if infinite Power, directed

The fifth Conference.

by infinite Wiſdom and Goodneſs, ſhould rule the Univerſe and the Affairs of Men! Is it not rather a Proſpect full of Comfort and Security, to find the Deity at the Head of Nature?

P. Eſpecially if we conſider, that without this Proſpect, there could be no Pleaſure nor Tranquillity in the Life of Man. A confirming ourſelves in ſteady Deſpair would then be our only Hope, and the Loſs of Being our only Relief from conſtant Terrors: For who could be ſecure amidſt the Storms of unguided Matter, and exiſting only at the Diſcretion of Chance? Men have thrown Life away, when they imagined it contained more Miſery than Comfort; which as they could only have imagined on this Suppoſition, ſo on this Suppoſition no Man could imagine otherwiſe.

M. But with what View do they endeavour to bring Mankind under ſuch a wretched and comfortleſs State?

P. They were reſolved to acquire Fame and Repute to themſelves, let the State of Mankind be as wretched as it pleaſed.

M. To acquire Fame by denying a Deity!

P. When a Man's firſt Paſſion, *Matho*, is the Deſire of being ſpoke of, and when he deſpairs of being diſtinguiſhed for any laudable Attempt; this he lays hold of as a compendious Way of attaining his End. The Generality of Mankind believe, and revere a Deity; and only a *fine Genius*, forſooth, can deſpiſe both a Deity and Mankind.

M. De-

M. Deteſtable Fury!

P. If it were poſſible, *Matho*, that ever any Man ſince the Beginning of the World, had denied a Deity from the Conviction of his own Arguments, I ſhould not aſcribe their Impiety to this Paſſion.——Yet they pretend, for Decency's Sake, by denying a Deity, to ſupport the Cauſe of Truth.

M. That is full as ridiculous, as the other is impious! What have they to do with Truth, after denying the *infinite Intelligence*, the only Source whence it can be derived? Pray, in what do they place the Nature of their Truth? In the Inconſtancy of Chance? Or the Inactivity of Matter? Or in the infinite Abyſs of Emptineſs?

P. It would ſurprize you more to tell you, that ſome of them have pretended the great Advantages of Atheiſm to Mankind; but it is needleſs, if not ridiculous, to look for Conſiſtency in their Schemes: Leaving them therefore to the Contempt they merit, tell me,

XC. Since the Deity depends on no ſuperior Cauſe, or ſince his Exiſtence and Perfections are neceſſary, can any Thing be wanting to him, which can belong to a perfect and happy Nature?

M. This Queſtion has been anſwered in Effect, I think, from many Things that have been ſaid already. A Neceſſity of Perfection implies infinite Perfection; and infinite Perfection, infinite Happineſs. It was thus we ſaw

The fifth Conference.

his infinite Goodneſs; becauſe, by a Plenitude of Perfection, he is infinitely raiſed above all Wants.

P. From this it will follow, that the Happineſs of the Deity and *that* of his Creatures are of a different Nature: *Our* Happineſs conſiſts in having our Wants ſupplied: *His*, in in having no Wants to be ſupplied. Hence this delightful Truth, the Creation of a World (ſince it could not add to his Happineſs) is entirely owing to his Goodneſs: Or the Happineſs of his Creatures was his only View; and his Deſigns cannot fail of attaining their End. ——But, to conclude, how will you ſatisfy yourſelf in all Time coming, that *God is*, and *is ſuch a Being?* For it is one Thing to ſee a Truth, and another to retain an habitual Knowledge of it afterward.

M. I will call to Mind the ſeveral Reaſons, which force the Mind to acknowledge a Deity, and the Perfections of his Nature.

P. I mean, how will you come at a ready View of this at any Time, without entering into a long Train of Reaſoning?

M. I will look to the Heavens, or to the Earth. A Glimpſe of the Sun or Stars, any living Creature, any vegetable Being, will kindle up the whole Train of Thought in my Mind. I will conſider my own Body, or a Part of it. There, though I do not ſee the Deity with my Eyes, I cannot help perceiving his Power working a thouſand Ways. How can I loſe Sight of the Deity, when the Conſiſtency

ſiſtency and Preſervation of all Things, *above*, *below*, and *round* me, nay in the very Body, ſhew him conſtantly ſupporting and directing that very Particular, to which I point my Thought.——Though I abſtract from all material Things, if I call to Mind any *immutable* and *neceſſary Truth*; in that I ſhall perceive (if I durſt ſo expreſs myſelf) the *divine Intellect*. In a word, ſince I cannot withdraw myſelf from his Preſence, nor from amidſt the Operations of his Power; I muſt find God, *powerful* and *wiſe*, and *good*, in every Thing I either look at or reflect upon.

P. Can any one doubt then, Whether God *be*, becauſe he does not diſcover him with his Eyes?

M. Such a Man muſt doubt for no other Reaſon, but becauſe he had no Reaſon to doubt. If the Deity could be diſcerned with bodily Eyes, which are deſigned for the Perception of corporeal Objects, he would not be that *neceſſarily exiſting*, *infinitely perfect Being*, whoſe Nature conſtitutes our Happineſs. The Soul itſelf, of the Exiſtence of which we cannot doubt, ſince our very Doubting proves the Thing, is not thus to be perceived. He who doubts whether the Deity *be*, becauſe he does not ſee him, ought to demand a Sight of his own Soul, in order to be ſatisfied that he is a living Being. We ſee the whole Frame of Nature contrived by his Wiſdom, and ſupported by his Power: This is the fulleſt, the ſtrongeſt View, the Heart of Man can deſire!

The ſixth Conference.

P. You expreſs the Thing well. The Man knows not what he would have, who complains for Want of this Sort of Proof, for Want of ocular Demonſtration: We have it in the ſtrongeſt Manner poſſible. For while we look at any Thing which the Eyes can perceive, we behold that very Thing, which unleſs the Deity were, could not be. So impoſſible is it to ſee any Thing, which doth not ſhew us the Creator of Heaven and Earth! We are *Eye-witneſſes* every Moment of the *Operations* of his Power, while his Knowledge *guides* the Motions and Productions of Nature. He doth not only preſide over the Main of Affairs, and manages inferior Things by a delegated Power; as ſome inconſiſtently imagine: No he informs the meaneſt *Reptile* by his Wiſdom, to all the Ends of its Exiſtence; he conducts every Herb, every Plant of the Field to its ſpecifick Perfection; and directs all the Motions in the Heavens, and all the Changes on the Earth.

M. It would, in Truth, be extremely fooliſh in us, after we were forced to allow that he binds together by his Power the ſolid Subſtance of Matter, to deny that he conducts the Inactivity of it, in all the Changes it undergoes. It was thus you diſcovered to me the Origin of Motion. The various Exertion of the ſame Power, which binds together the ſolid Subſtance, moves it.

P. They who would place the Dignity of *almighty Power*, and *infinite Knowledge*, in Eaſe and

and Inactivity, ſeem to have their Thoughts on ſome *Eaſtern Tyrant*, while they are ſpeaking of the Deity; and meaſure his Happineſs by their own Nature, and want of Power.

XCI. And now, *Matho*, we have brought the Subject of our Conferences to a Cloſe; having obſerved what was moſt neceſſary and obvious, concerning the material Univerſe, the Souls of Brutes and Men, and concerning the *adorable Deity* himſelf. I cannot be of any farther Service to you, nor can we leave off at a more proper place.

M. Nay, *Philon*, I beg you would not think of that ſo ſoon. There are ſtill ſome Particulars concerning the *Motions of the Planets*, which I would fain underſtand in ſome Degree; and in thoſe Matters I can do nothing by myſelf. Beſides, ſome Things you know in our former Diſcourſes you referred to a more proper Place.

P. You do not conſider, *Matho*, that the longer we continue our Conferences, the more Things we muſt refer; in which, perhaps, I can give you no Satisfaction at laſt.

M. Let us at leaſt converſe on thoſe Subjects: For I have obſerved all along, that while you are ſpeaking on any Thing, many Thoughts offer to me, which would not have otherwiſe occurred.

P. This is generally the Caſe, when two Perſons converſe together with Openneſs and Friendſhip. By endeavouring to unfold our Difficulties,

The ſixth Conference.

Difficulties, we ſometimes diſcover the Reaſons of Things we were ignorant of: And in this View only can I pretend to talk on thoſe Subjects with you for the future.—— But I cannot help being ſurprized, that at an Age when others amuſe themſelves with Trifles, you ſhould ſo warmly purſue theſe ſeverer Enquiries, in which you muſt certainly find no ſmall Difficulty.

M. Shall I freely tell you, *Philon*, what I have hitherto obſerved in the Courſe of my Education?

P. With all my Heart. I ſhall be pleaſed to hear your Obſervations; they muſt be ſomewhat ſingular, and entertaining, I ſuppoſe.

M. The Subjects we have touched upon, ſeem ſcarce to have any Difficulty, in Compariſon of thoſe Things, which are forced upon us, almoſt when Infants. What can be more hard and unintelligible to us, than to hear of the different *Declenſions* of *Nouns*; the *Moods*, *Tenſes*, and *Conjugation* of *Verbs*; with *Genders*, *Caſes*, and the reſt of that Stuff? In the Subjects we have hitherto ſpoke of, Reaſon convinces and ſatisfies the Mind, and Truth rewards it with Pleaſure: But in the firſt Beginnings of *Language* and *Grammar*, every Thing is horrid, rough, and really terrible to a Child. Inſtead of Reaſon, we are told of *Authority*, and the *Rule of Cuſtom*, which has often both approved, and condemned the ſame Forms of Speech, as new Modes of Expreſſion prevailed. I wiſh

our

our *Parents* and *Maſters* would conſider how conſiſtent it is to be ſo ſevere with us when Infants, and to ſpare us ſo much when more advanced. It looks as if they thought the Art of Speaking, or rather, the Knowledge of Words, was preferable to the Art of Thinking. We are laſhed into the Knowledge of a Heap of Words, and after that left to our own Diſcretion, to think rationally, or otherwiſe, as we have a Mind, or rather, as it happens.

P. But ſtill you muſt allow, *Matho*, that Children may learn to ſpeak, before they can think to Purpoſe.

M. Can they ſpeak to Purpoſe, before they think to Purpoſe? They may prate, before they can think to Purpoſe. And why do they not learn to prate *Latin* by the Ear, as they do *Engliſh?* They would acquire this in leſs Time, than they are now in preparing the Way to it. I have heard good Judges ſay, that a Boy may learn more *Latin* in two Years, in a Place where it is conſtantly ſpoke, than in four, by the ſtiff formal Method of Rules, without that Practice. From the Reſtraint we are under leſt we ſhould talk falſe *Latin*, we never acquire that ready Command of the Language, which might be eaſily attained by ſpeaking it. Before we underſtand a plain familiar Style, we muſt be let into the Beauties of poetical Diction. Great Pains are ſometimes taken to point out to us the lofty Sentences in our Authors, when perhaps

The ſixth Conference.

haps we ought not ſo much as to have heard of the Things, which thoſe Sentences contain. Is not this ſhewing a very partial Regard to Sound?

P. I own, if that be the Caſe, the Pains taken ſeem to be miſplaced.

M. Is it not the Caſe? What Boy is not taught with great Pomp,

Ille Pater, Rectorque Deûm, cui dextra triſulcis
Ignibus armata eſt, qui nutu concutit orbem,
Induitur faciem tauri, miſtúſque juvencis
Mugit, &c.

Here is a notable Contraſt, as I take it, between the Abſurdity of the Senſe, and the Sublimity of the Expreſſion; nor are the Paſſages of this Sort few in Number.

P. I fancy, *Matho*, it would be agreeable enough to hear your Criticiſms on the Books you have read: Pray which are your favorite Authors?

M. I don't pretend to Criticiſm, though I know what pleaſes myſelf. It appears to me, that the Hiſtorians may be read with Pleaſure and Profit. I have read *Cæſar*, and ſome Books of *Livy*, with Satisfaction; and the leſſer Authors that are put in our Hands before theſe. The ſhort Lives of *Cor. Nepos*, ſeem to me well fitted for Children: Nor do I find ſo much Fault with *Juſtin*'s Want of Chronology, as is generally done. Boys rather mind

mind the Thread of the Narration, than the Diſtinction of Years: Let that be as it will, a little Pains of the Maſter would make that a uſeful Book.

P. You ſay nothing of the Poets.

M. I have but little to ſay of them: What does it concern me to know whether *Alexis* was *Pollio* or *Mecænas*'s Boy? Or who he was? I ſhould have been at no great Loſs, though I had never heard of him.

P. I agree with you; we can reap no great Profit from a Thing, which we muſt be cautioned againſt, leſt it do us Hurt.

M. That brings to my Mind the *Silenus* of the ſame admired Author; the ſafeſt Way of explaining which to a young Lad, I think, is to leave him ignorant of the Senſe.

P. That is a new Way of explaining Things!

M. Conſider the Story of *Paſiphae*, which the Poet dwells upon with nauſeous Length, and ſeems to leave unwillingly, and tell me whether you are not of my Opinion?

P. I am not ſo ready in theſe Things as you.

M. And then I dare ſay the School-boy who underſtands

——uti magnum per inane coacta
Semina terrarumque, animæque, mariſque
fuiſſent——

will be in a fair Way to underſtand as difficult Things as any we have yet ſpoke of I

The ſixth Conference.

am ſure I plagued both my Maſter and myſelf heartily about it, with no great Satisfaction to either of us. And pray, *Philon*, is it not ſtrange, that while they think us capable of entering into theſe Things, they ſhould think us incapable of the leaſt Grain of Truth, or rational Principles?

P. But every Thing is not ſo exceptionable, as the Paſſages you have cited.

M. A notable Recommendation, That every Thing is not ſo abſurd! If every Thing that is exceptionable were taken out, (ſo far as I have read, or am capable to judge) there would be great Chaſms, I'm afraid, in the ancient Poets.

P. How comes it then, *Matho*, that thoſe Authors have been the Admiration of the World for ſo many Ages? And that the moſt perfect Moderns are only ſo far tolerable, as they imitate thoſe ancient Writers?

M. Let them have been the Admiration of Men as much, and as long as you pleaſe; you will hardly perſuade me, that Boys ſhould be taught every Part of them indifferently, or can underſtand many Places that are commonly taught: And if I were a Man, I think I could find other Things to admire. Truth charms in any Dreſs; take the ſhining Paſſages you admire moſt, put them in other Words, and all you admire is gone. The *Ancients*, without Doubt, underſtood the Art of Writing, and were well acquainted with the Influence that Sound and Cadence has on the Affections of the

the Heart, and Paſſions of Men. But were it not worth while to caution young Lads with Reſpect to this Art, that it is an Edge-tool, and may be equally applied to a good or a bad Purpoſe? And to point out the Paſſages where the Ancients have abuſed it? It is not a very eaſy Thing to admire the Expreſſion, and have a juſt Contempt for the Thought. Let a Man firſt convince the Underſtanding, and then raiſe the Paſſions on that Side, as much as he can: But to draw the Affections to one Side, when Senſe and Reaſon perſuade us on the other, is both hurtful and ridiculous. And I would aſk you one Queſtion, *Philon*, Whether the exceſſive Veneration for thoſe Compoſitions has not hindered Things of greater Moment from being applied to as they ought? Or whether theſe are not the only Books recommended to the Admiration of yound Lads? Every one affects to find out new Beauties in them, and to be a Perſon of ſuperior Taſte; as if every Syllable contained a Treaſure of Myſtery.

P. You are growing warm, *Matho*; take Time to cool a little.

M. I can think for myſelf in theſe Matters, without envying other People their Admiration of Sound, or troubling them with my Notions: But you deſired me to ſpeak my Mind freely. However, I ſhall have done, after obſerving that it ſeems to me, from my own Experience, a wrong Method to confine us to the Study of Words ſo many Years; poſtponing